Rotten Symbol Mongering: Scapegoating in Post-9/11 American War Literature

David Andrew Buchanan

University of Denver

Follow this and additional works at: https://digitalcommons.du.edu/etd

Part of the American Literature Commons, Literature in English, North America Commons, and the Rhetoric and Composition Commons

Recommended Citation
https://digitalcommons.du.edu/etd/1014

This Dissertation is brought to you for free and open access by the Graduate Studies at Digital Commons @ DU. It has been accepted for inclusion in Electronic Theses and Dissertations by an authorized administrator of Digital Commons @ DU. For more information, please contact jennifer.cox@du.edu,dig-commons@du.edu.
Rotten Symbol Mongering: Scapegoating in Post-9/11 American War Literature

Abstract
A rhetorical approach to the fiction of war offers an appropriate vehicle by which one may encounter and interrogate such literature and the cultural metanarratives that exist therein. My project is a critical analysis—one that relies heavily upon Kenneth Burke's dramatistic method and his concepts of scapegoating, the comic corrective, and hierarchical psychosis—of three war novels published in 2012 (The Yellow Birds by Kevin Powers, FOBBIT by David Abrams, and Billy Lynn's Long Halftime Walk by Ben Fountain). This analysis assumes a rhetorical screen in order to subvert and redirect the grand narratives the United States perpetuates in art form whenever it goes to war.

Kenneth Burke's concept of ad bellum purificandum (the purification of war) sought to bridge the gap between war experience and the discourse that it creates in both art and criticism. My work extends that project. I examine the symbolic incongruity of convenient symbols that migrate from war to war ("Geronimo" was used as code for Osama bin Laden's death during the S.E.A.L team raid; "Indian Country" stands for any dangerous land in Iraq; hajji is this generation's epithet for the enemy other). Such an examination can weaken our cultural "symbol mongering," to borrow a phrase from Walker Percy. These three books, examined according to Burke's methodology, exhibit a wide range of approaches to the soldier's tale. Notably, however, whether they refigure the grand narratives of modern culture or recast the common redemptive war narrative into more complex representations, this examination shows how one can grasp, contend, and transcend the metanarrative of the typical, redemptive war story.

Document Type
Dissertation

Degree Name
Ph.D.

Department
English

First Advisor
Billy J. Stratton, Ph.D.

Second Advisor
Linda Bensel-Meyers

Third Advisor
Clark Davis

Keywords
9/11, September 11th, Afghanistan, Iraq, Kenneth Burke, Scapegoating, War literature

Subject Categories
American Literature | American Studies | Literature in English, North America | Rhetoric and Composition

Publication Statement
Copyright is held by the author. User is responsible for all copyright compliance.

This dissertation is available at Digital Commons @ DU: https://digitalcommons.du.edu/etd/1014
ROTTEN SYMBOL MONGERING:
SCAPEGOATING IN POST-9/11 AMERICAN WAR LITERATURE

———

A Dissertation

Presented to

the Faculty of Arts and Humanities

University of Denver

———

In Partial Fulfillment

of the Requirements for the Degree

Doctor of Philosophy

———

by

David A. Buchanan

August 2015

Advisor: Dr. Billy J. Stratton
Abstract

A rhetorical approach to the fiction of war offers an appropriate vehicle by which one may encounter and interrogate such literature and the cultural metanarratives that exist therein. My project is a critical analysis—one that relies heavily upon Kenneth Burke’s dramatistic method and his concepts of scapegoating, the comic corrective, and hierarchical psychosis—of three war novels published in 2012 (*The Yellow Birds* by Kevin Powers, *FOBBIT* by David Abrams, and *Billy Lynn’s Long Halftime Walk* by Ben Fountain). This analysis assumes a rhetorical screen in order to subvert and redirect the grand narratives the United States perpetuates in art form whenever it goes to war.

Kenneth Burke’s concept of *ad bellum purificandum* (the purification of war) sought to bridge the gap between war experience and the discourse that it creates in both art and criticism. My work extends that project. I examine the symbolic incongruity of convenient symbols that migrate from war to war (“Geronimo” was used as code for Osama bin Laden’s death during the S.E.A.L team raid; “Indian Country” stands for any dangerous land in Iraq; *hajji* is this generation’s epithet for the enemy other). Such an examination can weaken our cultural “symbol mongering,” to borrow a phrase from Walker Percy. These three books, examined according to Burke’s methodology, exhibit a wide range of approaches to the soldier’s tale. Notably, however, whether they refigure the grand narratives of modern culture or recast the common redemptive war narrative
into more complex representations, this examination shows how one can grasp, contend, and transcend the metanarrative of the typical, redemptive war story.
Acknowledgements

The views expressed in this article are those of the author and do not reflect the official policy or position of the United States Air Force, Department of Defense, or the U.S. Government.

Thank you to Dr. Billy Stratton, my academic advisor and dissertation director. I came to the University of Denver because of Dr. Stratton, and it proved to be a wonderful decision. Thank you to Dr. Linda Bensel-Meyers, who first introduced me to Kenneth Burke and taught me about commonplace books. Both Dr. Stratton and Dr. Bensel-Meyers have served as wonderful readers throughout this project. Thanks are also in order for Dr. Clark Davis and Dr. Dean Saitta who graciously agreed to serve on my committee. I have learned much during my doctoral studies, and all of the members of my committee are responsible for a huge portion of that. I’ve watched them negotiate academia and the classroom in ways that I hope to emulate someday, and I consider myself fortunate for having worked with all of them. I should also thank my mother, Rita Buchanan, who caught many a misplaced comma in early drafts of this manuscript. And finally, I thank my wife, Dr. Cindy Buchanan, who has, for years, been a patient and supportive partner in this and other endeavors. She has long been the most important influence on my personal and professional lives for a long time, and I owe her everything. She is my biggest fan, my strongest motivator, and my best friend, and I am lucky to have her on my team.
# Table of Contents

Introduction: The Resilience of Racist Language, Symbols, and Rhetoric in Post-9/11 War Literature .................................................................................................................. 1
A Note on Terminology ........................................................................................................... 20

Chapter One: War Literature, its Criticism, and the Fetishization of Experience ............. 23
The Cyclical Pattern of War’s Representation ........................................................................... 23
The Ideology of Combat Gnosticism and the Genre of War Literature ............................. 34
Paul Fussell’s Entrenchment of Combat Gnosticism in Contemporary War Literature ................................................................................................................................. 41
Paul Fussell’s Disciples and the Resilience of Combat Gnosticism ..................................... 54
The Anxiety of Authenticity in the Writing of War Literature ............................................... 65
Packaging Combat Gnosticism .................................................................................................. 70

Chapter Two: Kenneth Burke’s Scapegoat: a Method for War Literature ......................... 85

Chapter Three: Confounding Expectations and Chasing the Scapegoat in Kevin Powers’
*The Yellow Birds* .................................................................................................................... 109
Kevin Powers’ Philosophy of Form: Packaging the American War Novel ............................ 115
Managing Appetites and Appeasements in the War Novel ..................................................... 126
Tracing the Scapegoats’ Demise .............................................................................................. 138
“Getting Deviant”: the Scapegoating of Sergeant Sterling .................................................... 152
“Something happened”: the Scapegoating of Daniel Murphy ............................................. 163

Chapter Four: The Comic Corrective and Ben Fountain’s *Billy Lynn’s Long Halftime Walk* ................................................................................................................................. 170
Maintaining a Perspective by Incongruity: Fountain’s War on War Porn ............................. 175
Preventing a Perspective by Incongruity .................................................................................. 189
Caving under the Pressure of Getting it Right ...................................................................... 201
The Mortification of Billy Lynn ................................................................................................. 214

Chapter Five: The Convenient Scapegoat in David Abrams’ *FOBBIT* ............................... 224
A Good Fobbit Is Hard to Find ................................................................................................... 238
Fobbits Who Don’t Threaten The Hierarchy Need Not Be Purged ....................................... 252
Abe Shrinkle and the Hierarchical Embarrassment of Fobbit-ness ....................................... 257
Shrinkle’s Exile ......................................................................................................................... 273

Chapter Six: Representing *Hajji*: This Generation’s Enemy “Other” ............................... 285
The Birth of Hajji ..................................................................................................................... 290
Sniping Hajji .......................................................................................................................... 296
Dismantling Hajji .................................................................................................................... 307
Hajji, Identification, Scapegoating ......................................................................................... 337
List of Figures

Figure 1: Donald Rumsfeld at Fort Carson................................................................. 7
Figure 2: Back jacket of Carnivore ................................................................. 94
Figure 3: Cover art and back jacket of the first edition of The Yellow Birds ........ 117
Figure 4: A parallel analysis of the scapegoat process ........................................... 151
Figure 5: Example of a Billy Lynn “word cloud” ..................................................... 182
Figure 6: Photo of Destiny’s Child on stage at halftime in 2004.............................. 191
Figure 7: Ben Fountain’s inscription .................................................................... 209
Figure 8: Cover of Fobbit .................................................................................... 234
Figure 9: Screen shot of Marine Corporal Joshua Belile ....................................... 325
Figure 10: Screen shot of “durka durka Muhammad Jihad” scene in Team America 327
Figure 11: ICUHAJI license plate.......................................................................... 354
Introduction: The Resilience of Racist Language, Symbols, and Rhetoric in Post-9/11 War Literature

Men build their cultures by huddling together, nervously loquacious, at the edge of an abyss. (Kenneth Burke, *Permanence* 272)

This project began during the summer of 2005, when I was deployed to Saudi Arabia in support of the so-called Global War on Terror. It was my first trip to the region, and though I am a pilot in the U.S. Air Force, I was assigned to a diplomatic position with the Royal Saudi Air Force. It was a great job, one full of ample free time, a small amount of additional responsibility, and very little oversight. Another officer—a major—and I were responsible for overflight clearances for “coalition” aircraft as they crisscrossed Saudi airspace. This meant that—to obtain the proper approvals and signatures—we had to hand-carry a form to the Royal Saudi Air Force headquarters building in downtown Riyadh two or three times a week. One morning, when the major and I (I carried the rank of captain) were leaving our extremely secure American compound on the outskirts of the city, the gate guard, a young Marine from Minnesota, checked my identification card and said, “Watch you don’t get scalped by no injuns out there.”
My career in the Air Force has taken me to some interesting places, and I have served in a number of capacities. I flew a KC-10 refueling tanker around the world, including over 120 missions in the skies over Afghanistan and Iraq. I taught literature and composition at the Air Force Academy (my alma mater). I was a speechwriter for a three-star general. In all that time, however, I never stopped thinking about that young man’s statement. It struck me then, as it does now, as sad and disturbing, and I have never stopped pondering the cultural forces that were at work there.

I initially intended to write about the specific nature of the stereotype that worked its way into that nineteen-year-old Marine’s psyche only to be chewed up and spat out in Riyadh, Saudi Arabia, to another man about to drive through a modern metropolis in a Toyota Landcruiser. But then I began to—much to my chagrin—discover that such misplaced and recycled metaphors and historical stereotypes are a linguistic tradition when Americans go to war. That is, the most convenient stereotypes and proverbs that Americans tend to recycle for use in our contemporary metanarratives of war tend to relentlessly revert to the same language of the United States’ conquest of the American West and the so-called Indian Wars of the nineteenth century.

This cultural habit has existed for generations, but it was popularized and normalized during Vietnam. An Army general during Vietnam named Maxwell Taylor, in testimony delivered before the Senate Foreign Relations Committee in 1965, once described the situation in Vietnam by saying that “[i]t is very hard to plant the corn outside the stockade when the Indians are still around. We have to get the Indians farther away in many provinces to make good progress” (qtd. in Drinnon 369). Forward
firebases near Vietcong territory were often colloquially called Ft. Apaches, and territory
not controlled by the United States anywhere in Vietnam was widely referred to as
“Indian Country” by soldiers, journalists, and elected officials alike. Indeed, *Indian
Country* is the title of Philip Caputo’s 1987 novel about a veteran who buried his lifelong
friend, an Ojibwa man named Bonny George, on a Vietnam battlefield.

I read Caputo’s novel during one of my five deployments to the Persian Gulf, a
time when it became quite clear to me that little has changed in the way Americans
linguistically fashion their experiences of war since the nineteenth century. I once sat
through a briefing delivered by a high-ranking officer who, with none of the healthy
ambiguity of Caputo’s tale, described the entire nation of Iraq as “Indian Country.”
Another supervisor often repeated the tired aphorism that there were too many chiefs and
not enough Indians in my squadron. When I took a daytrip to do some shopping in a
fancy mall in Abu Dhabi, before my coworkers and I left base, a middle-aged female
sergeant lectured us on proper behavior and decorum while we were “off the
reservation,” as she put it. When I spent a few days on an American airbase in
Kazakhstan, I saw a t-shirt for sale in the base’s store (the “Base Exchange,” or “BX”)
that read “Taliban Hunting Club” above a gun sight centered on a silhouette of a bearded,
bin Laden lookalike that was plastered on an Old West “WANTED” sign. In a novel
about the Iraq war, I read this line: “The PX, run by the U.S. Military, is the equivalent of
the Old West general store. Its aisles are stocked with potato chips, beef jerky, cases of soda, sunglasses…” (52).

Of course, none of my observations are necessarily new, even though I was noticing such problematic language, perhaps, for the first time. As Winona LaDuke, a well-known activist, actress, and politician of Ojibwe ancestry, writes in *The Militarization of Indian Country* (2013), “the military has named us and claimed us” throughout history (xvi). And, as LaDuke goes on to point out, “Native nomenclature in the US military is widespread. From Kiowa, Apache Longbow and Black Hawk helicopters to Tomahawk missiles, the machinery of war has many Native names” (xvii). I had long noticed this disturbing naming trend as well, but it wasn’t until that day in 2005 that it became painfully clear to me that the appropriation of Native American stereotypes, proverbs, metaphors, or symbols often goes unchallenged in the discourse of war. Sometimes it is even celebrated. With every encounter, I became more and more exasperated by the resilience of such racist language.

In *Facing West: The Metaphysics of Indian Hating and Empire Building* (1980), Richard Drinnon writes in this thorough examination of America’s habit to fashion images of the enemy according to a long heritage of “Indian Hating” in American culture: “every generation of Anglo-Americans down to the present has followed the pattern set then and has repeated, with minor variations, such justifications for burning natives in their villages and rooting them out of their swamps” (xii). The pattern still holds true

1 See chapter five of this dissertation for a close reading of the satirical language in David Abrams’ *FOBBIT* (2012).
today. For an essay published in *The Stranger* shortly before the U.S. invaded Iraq in 2003, Sherman Alexie writes, “Thus, the United States was founded, in part, on the demonization of Native Americans, and it’s damn easy to justify the mass extermination of demons, isn’t it?” (n. pag.). Al Carroll, in his carefully researched *Medicine Bags and Dog Tags* (2008), notes, “the Second Iraq War marks the fifth war in U.S. history where war supporters have invoked the image of the enemy as ‘Indians’ and have used Wild West imagery” (200). As Alexie explains, this cycle reflects that, behind America’s war culture, there lurks an abiding hypocritical manipulation of language:

> We will only win the metaphorical and clichéd war on terror when George W. Bush proclaims a metaphorical and clichéd victory of terror . . . as a Native American, I find it ironic that the United States wants to go to war with Iraq because it keeps breaking treaties. (n. pag.)

Many other scholars—like Drinnon, Carroll, and LaDuke—have examined the ways that native American stereotyping and metaphor recycling tenaciously emerge whenever Americans go to war.² Like Alexie, all of these scholars remind us of the troubling linguistic, cultural, and historic legacy in the United States that, as LaDuke puts it, treads on “dangerous ground,” a ground that today extends from battlefield violence in Iraq and Afghanistan to cultural violence in native communities across the United States (xvii).

In the *Chronicle of Higher Education*, shortly after 9/11, Richard Slotkin warned that, in response to the fear and hatred that grew out of the attacks, the U.S. may likely

---

² For extended examinations of Native American and Indian War metaphors, proverbs, and stereotypes and their recycled use in modern discourse, see Slotkin (*Regeneration Through Violence* [1973]); Berkhofer (*The White Man’s Indian* [1978]); Dower (*War Without Mercy* [1986]); Engelhardt (*The End of Victory Culture* [1995]); Bordewich (*Killing the White Man’s Indian* [1996]); and Carrol (*Medicine Bags and Dog Tags* [2008]).
revert to what he called the “savage war,” a scenario he predicted would express “the profound sense of rage we feel when we have helplessly suffered a terrible trauma” (B11). He rightly pointed out that this type of war is “so at odds with reality that [its] imperatives can never be fulfilled” (B11). In a New York Times column from 2005, Patricia Limerick agreed, adding that “much of what we have taken to calling ‘the lessons of Vietnam’ . . . could just have easily been learned as ‘the lessons of the Indian wars’” (A23). She called the metaphorical reframing of “Indian War” epithets and stereotypes examples of “historical amnesia” and declared that it is “a national misfortune that the Indian wars have faded from the memory of most citizens” (A23). From Slotkin and Limerick to Carroll, LaDuke and Alexie, many other scholars (Billy J. Stratton, Michael Yellow Bird, Don Trent Jacobs, Elizabeth Bird, Vine Deloria, Gerald Vizenor) have written extensively about the persistence of the savage/civilized binary and the myriad manifestations of Indian stereotyping in a hyper-militarized post-9/11 culture in the United States. Collectively, this body of work encourages a shift away from the language of conquest to that of a more accurate recasting of native people, the Indian Wars, and any group of human beings that may become an enemy of the United States.

This is a difficult feature of American war culture to dislodge, though. As Elizabeth Bird writes, “[t]he fact that these stereotypes have been around so long demonstrates the way they have become entrenched in white mythology” (89). Entrenched they most definitely are. A few months after President Bush made his “mission accomplished” speech aboard the USS Abraham Lincoln in May of 2003, Secretary of Defense Donald Rumsfeld gave a speech at Fort Carson, a large Army base
south of Colorado Springs, Colorado. He made the obligatory expression of gratitude to the troops for their service, and he vowed the eternal support of a grateful nation. He also made an explicit link between soldiers fighting in Afghanistan and nineteenth century Indian fighters: “In the global war on terror, U.S. Forces, including thousands from this base,” Rumsfeld said, “have lived up to the legend of Kit Carson, fighting terrorists in the mountains of Afghanistan, hunting the remnants of the deadly regime in Iraq” (qtd. in Miles). Behind Rumsfeld’s podium stood a color guard of cavalrmen, astride horses, dressed up in cavalry-style costumes from the nineteenth century (of Custer’s 7th Cavalry no less) with the Rampart Range of the Rocky Mountains in the background (see fig. 1). Forget facts and history, it is the “legend” of Kit Carson that Rumsfeld put to use in his rhetoric.

Fig. 1. Donald Rumsfeld at Fort Carson on 7 October 2003. Source: Miles.
Robert Kaplan, a White House consultant during the invasion of Iraq in 2003, went so far as to encourage such appropriation. In a 2004 op-ed for Wall Street Journal, Kaplan writes:

The American military is back to the days of fighting the Indians. The red Indian metaphor is one with which a liberal policy nomenklatura may be uncomfortable, but Army and Marine field officers have embraced it because it captures perfectly the combat challenge of the early 21st century. (n. pag)³

Kaplan isn’t alone in this approach. In an essay entitled “The ‘Old West’ in the Middle East: U.S. Military Metaphors in Real and Imagined Indian Country” (2008), Stephen Silliman catalogues the many instances of “Old West” metaphor raping in our post-9/11 war discourse. Actually, Silliman logs seventy-seven different “Indian Country” metaphors that appeared in news stories and weblog commentaries across various media outlets. As he concludes,

Transplanting the “Indian Country” metaphor across regions, through time, and in military contexts mobilizes a complex framework of already understood but national symbols to explain events, people, the nature of battle, and the very reasons for war in 21st-century Iraq. (238)⁴

In May of 2011, the exploitation of history and language in the service of American conceptions of modern war culminated during a Navy S.E.A.L. raid in

³ Kaplan also published a pair of books (Warrior Politics: Why Leadership Demands a Pagan Ethos [2002] and Imperial Grunts: The American Military on the Ground [2005]) that argue for a full return (strategically, morally, ethically) to the attitude with which America fought its genocidal war on native populations in the American West. Max Boot expresses similar sentiments his book Savage Wars of Peace: Small Wars and the Rise of American Power in 2002. For a different point of view, see Carroll’s chapter, “The Same Forces That Went against Us as a People,” for a discussion of the “parallels between U.S. domination of the Middle East and the Indian Wars” (198-206).

⁴ In 1993, Ann S. Pancake published a similar study of metaphor exploitation and the invocation of the “wild west” in discourse about the first gulf war (292).
Abbottabad, Pakistan, the operation that resulted in the death of Osama bin Laden. News quickly spread that the phase of the operation that included bin Laden’s death had been coded and reported by the S.E.A.L.s (over the radio) with the word “Geronimo.” Many defended the coding, then and now, with dubious claims that ignore, as Billy J. Stratton puts it, the “deeply problematic nature of Native representation in American culture” (141). For example, in an afterword to a celebratory graphic novel entitled *Code Word: Geronimo* (2011), John Del Vecchio suggests that—based on self-serving concepts of vagaries like bravery and valor—the military’s appropriation of “Geronimo” for use in a raid against the most hated man in the world was “a great honor to a great man, a great spirit. His name has come to embody the ideals of bravery and valor we ourselves wish to emulate” (77). This argument not only dictates to the native community what one should consider a “great honor,” it also, as Carroll explains, ignores the fact that “most Natives attach fundamentally different meanings to words and phrases such as patriotism, our land, fighting for my country, and the flag or our flag” (3).  

Indeed, Harlyn Geronimo, the great grandson of the Apache Chief and a veteran of two tours in Vietnam, describes—in a statement submitted to the U.S. Senate Commission on Indian Affairs—the use of “Geronimo” as a “grievous insult,” despite the military’s intent or the specific context of its use:

> And to call the operation to kill or capture Osama Bin Laden by the name Geronimo is such a subversion of history that it also defames a great human spirit and Native American leader. For Geronimo himself was the

---

5 For a wonderful book that illuminates the ways that Navajo conceptions of warfare, warriors, and the “legend” of Kit Carson differ from the metanarratives of mainstream American culture, see Tiana Bighorse’s book *Bighorse the Warrior* (1990).
focus of precisely such an operation by the U.S. military, an operation that assured Geronimo a lasting place in American and human history. (n. pag.)

In this special hearing entitled “Stolen Identities: The Impact of Racist Stereotypes on Indigenous People,” Suzan Shown Harjo, a Cheyenne and Hodulgee Muscogee advocate for American Indian rights, also delivered a statement that succinctly summarizes the basic offensiveness of such misappropriation in the context of modern war:

Geronimo was picked for the same reason that the term “Indian country” is still used to mean enemy territory. The “savage savage” Indian-as-enemy stereotype is so deeply embedded in the American psyche that there are those who fear that Indians, once in control of anything, will treat white people as badly as the historic whiteman treated us . . . When people representing the U.S. reach back a century to take a gratuitous swipe at Geronimo as an enemy and to equate him with a terrorist, they are insulting all Native American nations and people . . . That is why we take the matter of stereotypes so seriously and believe that we should not be subjected to denigrating names, imagery and behaviors in polite society. (n. pag.)

Stratton, in *Buried in Shades of Night* (2013), explains the issue further:

[T]he fear and loathing invoked by the horrific images of modern terrorism reaches to the core of America’s national psyche and extends renewed meaning to the age-old struggle between the forces of good and evil, civilization and savagery, and Christian and pagan—recalling a time, a place, and a world where the very fate of civilization is put into peril by savages who lurk in the dark and howling wilderness, waiting to descend anew upon unsuspecting settlements. (143)

This brings me back to the direction I decided to go with this dissertation. Yes, the persistence of appropriated language in the service of modern war and its deleterious effects on native people and their cultures is difficult to dispute. Moreover, it is equally disturbing to note that these racist habits are central tenets of American conceptions of the “enemy” in our post-9/11 wars. It is baffling that Americans—both soldiers and civilians—expect war to be justified and explained according to such myopic stereotypes.
and metaphors. In everyday life in the military and in the growing body of literature that takes the wars in Iraq and Afghanistan as its subject, our military members overlay the terministic screens of the “savage Indian” and the “Wild West” on their own war experiences because such symbols are a subconscious part of their national identity, regardless the ethnocentric version of history it reflects, regardless how poorly applied the metaphor may be. For an all-volunteer military that has been at war for almost fifteen years, this is, clearly, a risky manipulation of language and history. As Simon Harrison explains in his book about the way American soldiers have historically treated the bodies of dead enemies in modern war, “many transgressive forms of behavior are shaped and motivated by the same cultural metaphors as normal behavior” (14).

In his collection of essays on semiotics and societal symbol use—The Message in the Bottle: How Queer Man Is, How Queer Language Is, and What One Has to Do with the Other—Walker Percy writes,

Man’s capacity for symbol-mongering in general and language in particular is so intimately part and parcel of his being human, of his perceiving and knowing, of his very consciousness itself, that it is all but impossible for him to focus on the magic prism through which he sees everything else. (29)

The linguistic appropriations outlined above fall right in line with other, deeply embedded colonial representations of the indigenous peoples of the United States: big nosed Indian sports team mascots, childhood games of cowboys and Indians, and racist names of locations and events across the landscape of America culture and history. Sadly, as far as the discourse of modern war is concerned, it seems that the American symbol-monger has mastered the use and misuse of Indian War symbolism, be the monger Robert Kaplan, Donald Rumsfeld, or a teenaged Marine from Minnesota.
How, then, should a scholar of literature apprehend the work that is emerging from our post-9/11 wars? I propose such a project can respond one of two ways: with moral indignation or thoughtful examination. Considering the depth and “embeddedness” of appropriated and misappropriated symbols in the literature of war, I suggest that it is most appropriate for the critic to examine war literature as rhetoric (as opposed to realistic reportage of combat experience). Further, I suggest that one should do so with Kenneth Burke’s dramatistic method as the guide. This approach may not stop the racist use of Indian War stereotypes in American war culture, but as I will show, it does fully expose such symbol use (and misuse) as part of a larger pattern of loathing, victimization, and redemption (Kenneth Burke’s scapegoat mechanism) when America goes to war. Moreover, when the genre under consideration is as vast as “war literature,” a method of analysis like Burke’s resolves a major salient issue that has long dominated the literature of war: the tendency for the genre to be assembled and governed by an untenable and extremely limiting aesthetic, one that privileges combat experience and the witness account above all other forms and styles of war writing.

Kate McLoughlin, in her richly informative book *Authoring War* (2011), expresses the conventional critical account regarding war and its representation in literature; as she writes, “War, in other words, resists depiction” (6). But is this truly the case? Does war’s experience truly “resist depiction” any more than any other topic that might be represented and depicted in words? Or, is it more precise to say that the readers of war literature often resist accepting depictions of war that don’t provide vicarious experience or provide a common tale of tragic redemption or the chance for hero
worship? Perhaps this is what McLoughlin is arguing, not that war is necessarily any more difficult to write about than any other subject, but that in this genre, all such literature faces an aesthetic tension, one based on popular demands and expectations. After all, the many cultural functions of literature in general would make it an imperative for literature to represent war and to do so effectively. That imperative is even more pronounced when literature serves to counterbalance or correct the metanarratives enumerated above.

McLoughlin’s commentary deserves a fuller citation here:

The reasons that make war’s representation imperative are as multitudinous as those which make it impossible: to impose discursive order on the chaos of conflict and so to render it more comprehensible; to keep the record for the self and others (those who were there and can no longer speak for themselves and those who were not there and need to be told); to give some meaning to mass death; to memorialize; to inform civilians of the nature of battle so as to facilitate the reintegration of veterans into peacetime society; to provide cathartic relief; to warn; and even, through the warning, to promote peace. (7)

McLoughlin doesn’t reference Kenneth Burke once, but it seems to me that Burke’s dramatistic approach to literature, one that seeks “to fall on the bias” (Attitudes 47), covers every purpose she lists above in addition to the ones she doesn’t (to my mind, the glorification of combat and a justification of war designed to placate or satisfy a complacent public). The various expressions of war experience—depending on medium, style, and authorial biography—tend to have their advocates. So, considering McLoughlin’s long list, it would be irresponsible to suggest any “right” way to record the extreme reality of war in art. Thus, as this dissertation will show, a method like Burke’s is the proper one to bring to the dialectic of war literature.
As Burke points out in his book *Permanence and Change* (1954), throughout much of history there has existed a “usual way” by which societies seek to create “social cohesion” according to a “fluctuating” cycle of symbolic “mystification” followed by a period of “unmasking” (294). But, as Burke goes on to point out, this symbolic mystification has “been so often misused in history by the defenders of special sinister interests, (that) we clearly see its limitations” (294). This does not mean the literary critic is helpless in the face of such a cycle, for, in literature, we can observe “individual persons enacting roles in the social order” (294). However, as Burke suggests, these observations must be accompanied by a method so that we can note the cycle without becoming part of it. He explains: “might it not be possible that, were an educational system designed to that end, this very fluctuancy could be intelligently stabilized, through the interposing of method” (294). As this dissertation will display, Burke’s method may not end the American urge to demonize our enemies according to shopworn and inaccurate Puritanical conceptions of Native Americans, but it can work to stabilize our social instincts to symbolically mystify and unmask in the literature of war that we read and write.

If the art of war strains to make sense of war, its agents, and its victims, then the close study of that art does so as well. Furthermore, the telling of war stories is always ripe for literary interpretation and cultural application. Thus, this dissertation displays how a rhetorical study of the literature from and about our wars in Iraq and Afghanistan, according to Kenneth Burke’s methodology, can help us refrain from further reductions of indigenous cultures of the United States into caricature and lead us further away from
seeing the enemy as Other. I ask: can a rhetorical study of war literature illuminate aspects—undesirable though they may be—about the way Americans expect war to be fought and represented? My dissertation suggests an answer to this question through a rhetorical analysis of three war novels published in 2012 (The Yellow Birds by Kevin Powers, FOBBIT by David Abrams, and Billy Lynn’s Long Halftime Walk by Ben Fountain). I show how the terministic screen each one creates can be read in such a way that the criticism subverts and redirects the dominant metanarratives of the United States’ war fighting.\(^6\)

It takes time for honest art to emerge from war. Likewise, my study of literature (not my deployments to the Persian Gulf) has made one thing clear; it is not necessary to loathe a population or an enemy in an attempt to provide “security.” In effect, that is what we encourage when the painful history of our Indian Wars is twisted into misused symbols time and again. If we honestly and self-critically look at our post-9/11 wars and their stories (as this dissertation seeks to do), we can avoid the fear and paranoia that is inherent to past and current American militarism and conquest. The three works of fiction considered here exhibit a wide range of approaches to the soldier’s tale. All of them are involved in story telling problematics. Thus, this dissertation assesses those problematic tales and the scapegoat mechanisms therein to illuminate the grand narratives of modern war culture.

\(^{6}\) In Language as Symbolic Action (1966), Burke defines the “terministic screen” as a metaphor for the fact that “if any given terminology is a reflection of reality, by its very nature as a terminology it must be a selection of reality; and to this extent it must function also as a deflection of reality” (45).
The questions I ask of these novels are based on similar analyses of combat memoirs and non-fictive reports from the front written by nonprofessional writers—or, as Keith Brown and Catherine Lutz call this body of literature, “Grunt Lit” (322). Compared with the war novel, I examine how this mass of writing, some of it designed to titillate and vindicate a removed civilian populace through what Kenneth Burke calls “vicarious atonement” actually works (Permanence 90). Ultimately, this dissertation puts forth the idea that all representation is misrepresentation, that absolute authenticity is unattainable, and that the conveyance of war’s significance in literature demands a critical eye, one that is best informed by Burke’s rhetorical methods.

Chapter One surveys the status of the genre that I have chosen to refer to as “war literature.” Through an extended review of war literature’s criticism, I propose two reasons why McLoughlin might suggest that war “resists depiction.” First, considering that this is a genre of memoir, autobiography, history, fiction, journalistic accounts, and poetry, and considering that all of these forms and modes of war writing are linked by subject only, the genre is too vast for easy generic analysis. Second, I examine the ideological underpinnings of the genre of war literature as being made up by the guiding principle of “combat gnosticism,” a term coined by James Campbell in 1999. When combat gnosticism and a healthy dose of exceptionalism and what William Spanos calls the “specter of Vietnam” combine in contemporary American war literature, a corresponding literary aesthetic forms, one that perpetuates the language of conquest from earlier wars and one that allows a steady supply of books that reading tourists can consume safely.
In *American Exceptionalism in the Age of Globalization* (2008), Spanos’ phrase—

“The specter of Vietnam”—describes the ways that the memory of Vietnam has come to haunt America as a contradiction that menaced the legitimacy of its perennial self-representation as the exceptionalist and “redeemer nation.” In the aftermath of the Vietnam War, the dominant culture in America (including the government, the media, Hollywood, and even educational institutions) mounted a massive campaign to “forget Vietnam.” (ix)

These words should be read as cautionary ones for our post-9/11 wars and contemporary war literature, especially since the phenomenon he describes ultimately “transform[s] a healthy debate over the idea of America into a national neurosis” (ix). It takes no leap of logic to wonder if we are already collectively “forgetting” Iraq and Afghanistan. When convenient national narratives like manifest destiny or the vanishing frontier persist as symbols in the literature of war, the public reader too easily assumes exasperating but responsibility-displacing attitudes that justify war along similar lines, and the ideology of combat gnosticism, as I examine it, is one of the main culprits.

**Chapter Two** establishes Burke’s methodology and philosophy regarding rhetoric as the appropriate ones to bring to war literature. Using Kenneth Burke for theoretical refinement, I examine how the seductive nature of combat gnosticism tends to crowd out the vast and varied war experiences and war narratives of other Americans. I suggest that it is dangerous to allow war stories to carry too much of a redemptive mission in our culture even though this is, perhaps, the most common trait of popular American war writing. Since Burke focuses on the psychology of the audience, not of the “hero,” I argue that his method offers the proper perspective on war literature, one that allows a fruitful negotiation of titillating, unambiguous propaganda alongside other, purely decorative works of war literature. Specifically, I focus Burke’s “logology”
through the use of his concepts of hierarchical psychosis, scapegoating, and the cult of
the kill, and I establish how we can, when we read war literature, redirect the cycle of
vicarious victimage that often dominates the genre.

Chapter Three uses Burke’s scapegoat principle to trace the symbolic presence
of purgative catharsis and vicarious victimage within Kevin Powers’ novel, The Yellow
Birds (2012). If we accept the scapegoat principle, as Burke would have us accept it, as
“not primarily as a survival from earlier eras, but as a device natural to language here and
now,” then we can, perhaps, witness the spell of the ritual as it occurs in contemporary
war literature like Powers’ (“Dramatism” 451). When we trace the curative victims in
The Yellow Birds according to Burke’s philosophy of literary form, a goad emerges from
the criticism, one that could urge a movement away from a cultural need for such
sacrifice.

Chapter Four examines the extent by which Ben Fountain’s Billy Lynn’s Long
Halftime Walk (2012) deploys what Burke terms the “comic corrective” in its satirical
message. Burke labels the human being as an “animal exceptionally adept in the ways of
symbolic action” (“Dramatism” 353). For Burke, symbols dictate experience, not the
other way around. And so, in Billy Lynn, Billy Lynn and his fellow soldiers become
misused symbols to such an extent that their inner humanity is occluded by their roles as
redemptive vessels of the national guilt associated with the invasion of Iraq, 9/11, and a
nation’s rage. I examine the novel’s fluctuation between what Burke considers the
extremes of literature, from “the extreme of utterance” to “the extreme of pure beauty”
(Counter-Statement 54). As Burke says, in that
fluctuating region, between pure emotion (which leads to barbarism or iconoclasm in art) and pure decoration (which leads to hagiography), humanity and craftsmanship, utterance and performance, lies the field of art, the evocation of emotion by mechanism, a norm which, like all norms, is a conflict become fusion. (56)

Fountain’s novel takes big swings between unambiguous propaganda and real-seeming satire; it is only through analyzing those swings that one can reveal the artistic “evocation of emotion” as it occurs in Billy Lynn.

Chapter Five assesses the hierarchical psychosis (as Burke terms it in A Rhetoric of Motives) that dictates the social order on an American base in Iraq in a novel by David Abrams: FOBBIT (2012). Like Billy Lynn, FOBBIT is a satirical assessment of American war culture, but his satire details the way soldiers live and interact with each other on one small Forward Operating Base (called FOB Triumph) in Iraq in 2005. With Burke’s ideas about order and hierarchy, we can assess Abrams’ satire as a dialectic treatment of the ambivalent status of Fobbits (support troops who never leave base) and combat troops (the “real” warriors). As Burke writes in Attitudes Toward History, any propagandistic strategy like Abrams’ “must be employed as an essentially comic notion, containing two-way attributes lacking in polemical, one-way approaches to social necessity” (166). My treatment of FOBBIT shows how Abrams’ comic frame “is neither wholly euphemistic, nor wholly debunking,” so we can gain from it a “charitable attitude toward people that is required for purposes of persuasion and co-operation” (Attitudes 166). I examine the extensive hierarchical psychosis on FOB Triumph, and I show how such an order engenders scapegoats so that the order can survive. This chapter minimizes the typical combat scene in favor of an exploration of the scapegoat mechanism in FOBBIT,
resulting in a chapter that interrogates the social order of hero worship as it operates in post-9/11 American culture.

**Chapter Six** is a thorough examination of the epithet *hajji* and the ways it has been popularized in both Iraq and Afghanistan. Building on an essay I published in *War, Literature, and the Arts* in the Fall of 2014, I outline the ways *hajji* operates to complete what Burke calls “congregation by segregation” via a complex system of “identification” ("The Rhetorical Situation" 264). I make the case that *hajji* is an extension of the metaphysics of “Indian hating” while it is also one that incorporates religious vituperation and the demonization of the enemy into one harmful term of denigration via a complex scapegoat mechanism. If the existence and use of the word *hajji* (a real Arabic term of respect for those who complete the pilgrimage to Mecca) is not direct Indian hating, Indian hating at the societal level certainly trains soldiers how to use it effectively. Thus, Indian hating excuses, authorizes, and provides the model for the “hajji-fication” of the United States’ post-9/11 enemy.

*A Note on Terminology*

This dissertation refers extensively to “wars” that the United States has waged in Iraq and Afghanistan in the years that followed the tragedy of 9/11 with full awareness that “war” is a bit of a misnomer. Technically, the United States has never declared war on Iraq or Afghanistan, and the last time the United States declared war against any country was in June of 1942 when Congress voted to do so against Romania, Bulgaria, and Hungary. A number of critics take issue with the use of “war” to describe the
American military operations in Iraq and in Afghanistan. Simon Gupta, for instance, spends considerable time in *Imagining Iraq* (2011) explaining his selection of “invasion” to describe what the United States and the United Kingdom endeavored to do in Iraq with military forces in 2003 (19-23). While I accept his reasoning—and at times adopt “invasion” to describe the initial phases of the United States’ military operations in Iraq—I prefer the term “war” when I describe any armed conflict that has been endorsed by the United States government and/or enacted by the United States military since 9/11.7

It is also worth noting here that, in official terms, the most accurate way to refer to our various post-9/11 military adventures would be with the appropriately labeled “operation.” This naming convention is important within the military, at least as far as funding and planning and logistics are concerned. As of the writing of this dissertation, one official American military “operation” is ongoing: Operation Inherent Resolve, which describes all military actions in Syria and Iraq that seek to thwart the Islamic State in Levant/Syria (known as ISIL and ISIS). Operation Enduring Freedom (OEF), which describes the United States’ actions in Afghanistan, began on 7 October 2001 with airstrikes by American fighters and bombers, and missile strikes from American and British warships and submarines. OEF officially ended on 28 December 2014 when NATO took over with its “mission,” known as Resolute Support. Two other “operations” that can be considered part of the so-called Global War on Terror have also officially

7 See also Ted Remington’s “Ceci N’est Pas Une Guerre: The Misuse of War as Metaphor in Iraq” for an analysis of the term “war” and the ways it “has become an uneasy and unstable metaphor, not offering perspective, but creating a deadly myopia” (n. pag.).

21
ended: Operation Iraqi Freedom (OIF) lasted from the invasion of Iraq in March of 2003 until the draw down of troops was completed, a date officially marked as 1 September 2010. Thereafter (from 1 September 2010 through 18 December 2011, when the last U.S. troops departed Iraq), the conflict in Iraq was known within the military as Operation New Dawn. Again, considering the comprehensive intention of this project, I refer to all of the above operations, conflicts, invasions, and missions as “war.”
Chapter One: War Literature, its Criticism, and the Fetishization of Experience

There is no violence in Faulkner, there are no bull-fights in Hemingway.

(Kenneth Burke, “Realism” 44)

The Cyclical Pattern of War’s Representation

Since 9/11, the literary landscape that assesses and represents the wars in Iraq and Afghanistan has been dominated by non-fictive accounts of combat, be those accounts marketed as memoir, autobiography, or as journalistic reports from the battlefield. This phenomenon is perhaps the most consistent trait in American war literature. That is, as David Lawrence puts it in a 2013 essay that appeared in War, Literature, and the Arts, “fiction takes longer to gestate” (168). Roger Luckhurst agrees in an essay entitled “Not Now, Not Yet” (2014): “the conventional account is that there is a traumatic time lag between war and its novelistic assessment, as if the immediacy of war experience is irrecoverable” (55). In a speech delivered at the U.S. Air Force Academy last fall, Roxanna Robinson, the author of the Iraq war novel Sparta (2013), describes the “strict chronological pattern” of war writing in more detail:

There are three different kinds of war writing: journalism, memoir, and fiction (poetry, too) and each tells a different kind of truth. They follow a strict chronological pattern: first comes journalism, reported at the time, from the field; next comes memoir, after people have come home and
transcribed their notes. Poetry may come next, the last is fiction. Fiction is long, and it requires knowing more than the facts. Journalism is meant to be neutral, memoir is meant to render factual experience, but fiction is meant to tell an emotional truth. This truth must work its way through the heart as well as the mind. Emotion takes the longest to write about, because our understanding of it is slow. It was not until ten years after the invasion of Iraq that the first novel about it appeared—another intersection between war and literature. (7)

And, in an essay published in *The New York Times* this last winter, Michiko Kakutani repeated the same theme, pointing out that before novel-length war fiction can emerge, the actual event of war must “recede in time” (A1). Again, these critics aren’t observing anything new about war literature. War fiction just takes longer to appear, and this makes sense for both logical and logistical reasons. As David Langness, a book critic for *Paste* magazine, points out, the youngsters who fight wars simply do not possess the emotional or intellectual maturity to translate experience into art: “You cannot write a great war novel if your fatigues still fit,” he writes:

> War writing, by its very nature, emerges gradually out of the fog of the fight. It takes slow maturation, reflection, the ability to look back in honor and in horror and truly see and contextualize the whole incomprehensible experience. Pain and terror and agony only resolve themselves into meaningful narratives over the span of a decade or two or three. (n. pag.)

But what if you never wore fatigues? Does this explanation fully account for the “strict” chronological pattern that forces such a delay in the production of fictional treatments of war? What is it about war and war writing that results in a similar delay in war novels created by civilians? The answer might be much simpler than Langness suggests. Yes, war fiction—written by civilians *and* veterans—takes time, but that may not necessarily
be due to the nature of war itself. Rather, the delay seems to grow out of an abundance of deference to combat experience.

This is something we can track throughout a century and a half of American wars. Ambrose Bierce participated in the Civil War as a soldier in the Union Army, but his short story collection, *Tales of Soldiers and Civilians*, didn’t appear until 1891. Melville and Whitman both experienced the Civil War as civilians (though, to be fair, Whitman certainly encountered war firsthand through his service in Washington, D.C. hospitals), and both published war poetry during the Civil War.\(^8\) However, Whitman’s prose recollections of his own experience of war—*Specimen Days*—didn’t appear until 1892. Other creative prose about the Civil War took just as long to appear. Hamlin Garland’s short story, “The Return of a Private,” wasn’t published in the magazine *Arena* until 1890, after Garland visited home and heard his father reminisce about his Civil War experiences. Mark Twain may have been a volunteer member of the Confederate Army for one week before he lit out for the territory (where he stayed for the duration of the war), but his humorous tale of his limited time in the military—“The Private History of a Campaign that Failed”—wasn’t published until 1885. Twain’s scathing prose piece, “The War Prayer,” never appeared at all during his lifetime.\(^9\)

---

\(^8\) Melville’s *Battle Pieces and Aspects of the War* appeared in 1866, and Whitman published two collections, *Drum Taps* (1865) and *Sequel to Drum-Taps* (1866).

\(^9\) This caustic work was published posthumously in 1910.

For better or for worse, this same cycle seems to be holding true today in the genre of contemporary war literature, despite the emergence of a number of new publication forums (blogs, electronic literary journals, and various platforms of social

---

10 In *Authoring War*, Kate McLoughlin speculates that the specific “poesis” of the Iraq war or the “‘natural’ way (or ways)” that it is represented in literature “may well turn out to be the blog” (10). For extended discussions of the nature of soldier-authored blogs, popularly known as “milblogs,” see Michael Bellesiles’ chapter, “Iraq and Afghanistan” in *A People’s History of the U.S. Military* (2012) and *The Blog of War* (2006) by Matthew Currier Burden.
media). English novelist Graham Swift suggests that this delay between war and war’s representation in fiction is far from unique to the subject, and he suggests that there is no such thing as “contemporaneity” in any novel: “There’s an undeniable thrill in seeing what’s most current in our lives offered back to us in fictional guise, but it soon dates and is never enough” (n. pag.). Still, there is something else at work in war’s literature, something else that determines what type of person can write about war and when he or she can do so. After all, Swift waited until 2011 to publish his own Iraq war novel (*Wish You Were Here*).

A few war novels did quickly appear in England following 9/11—like Pat Barker’s journalist-in-Afghanistan novel *Double Vision* (2003) and Ian McEwan’s poorly reviewed *Saturday* (2005)—but nothing similar gained traction in the United States until Siobhan Fallon (a military spouse) wrote *You Know When the Men Are Gone* and Helen Benedict (a civilian) crafted *Sand Queen*, both of which were published in 2011.\(^\text{11}\) Thus, as Robinson mentions above, 2011 and 2012 likely mark a turning point in the most recent iteration of the cycle of war literature’s production. Serious American

contemporary war fiction finally began appearing during those years, and it continues to do so today in ever increasing numbers.\textsuperscript{12}

Yes, it takes both veterans and civilians a definite amount of time to produce imaginative representations of war, but that leaves literary criticism with a curious dilemma since it is, of course, also forced to wait. Of Vietnam War literature, once fiction began appearing, it took at least another ten years for serious scholarship to follow.\textsuperscript{13} This is where the field of war literature studies finds itself today, somewhere in the middle of a similar delay. Still, academic literary criticism about war fiction and war poetry hasn’t remained silent on the topic of war and literature for the last fourteen years. Indeed, while we were waiting for creative literature to emerge from the wars in Iraq and Afghanistan, critics of war literature still managed to constantly plumb the cultural, historical, and artistic dimensions of war. That meant, however, that scholarly criticism simply returned to the already established masters of literature in the wider canon of war literature.

In 2004 Sara Munson Deats edited a collection of essays for a book titled \textit{War and Words: Horror and Heroism in the Literature of Warfare}. In this book each essay

\begin{flushleft}
\textsuperscript{12} For an early canon of books related to the wars in Iraq and Afghanistan, see Michiko Kakatuni’s “A Reading List of Modern War Stories” that appeared on \textit{The New York Times} website on 25 Dec. 2014. See also Peter Molin’s list in his essay, “The Iraq and Afghanistan Wars in Fiction, Poetry, Memoir, Film, and Photography: A Compendium.”

\end{flushleft}
seeks to bring forward canonical texts for contemporary reexamination (such as Marlowe’s Tamburlaine plays, Hemingway’s war novels, and Virginia Woolf’s wartime work). Leah Marcus, for one, begins her epilogue by drawing attention to the uncanny and prescient connections between Marlowe’s Tamburlaine and the U.S. invasion and subsequent occupation of Afghanistan (Tamburlaine’s historical homeland was current day Uzbekistan). With a note of despair, however, she concludes, “Marlowe’s hero has nothing to teach us about our present task in the Middle East” (312). Indeed it does not, but such a transhistorical approach (Kenneth Burke would approve) suggests that when the subject is war, the critical establishment somewhat impatiently awaits for fiction (as opposed to reportage and non-fiction) to provide the primary material from which readers can draw cultural judgments and assessments.

*War and Words* is but one example of this impatience. Drawing from such landmark studies of war literature as Paul Fussell’s *The Great War and Modern Memory* (1975) and Samuel Hynes’ *The Soldier’s Tale: Bearing Witness to a Modern War* (1997), a number of recent books also reframe the art of previous wars in a more contemporary context. While many are concerned (as Fussell was) with the blurred line between fiction and nonfiction in war’s art, many contemporary critics seek to answer Margot Norris’ question in *Writing War in the Twentieth Century* (2000): “Can art,” she asks, “overcome its internal constitutive difficulty in addressing the violent, the cruel, and the ugly without transforming it into beauty, without endowing it with aesthetic effects, without arousing pleasure, without bringing to redemption what should be irredeemable?” (20). In *Coming
Out of War: Poetry, Grieving, and the Culture of the World Wars (2005), Janis Stout responds by pointing out that if the twentieth century was a century full of war, then the art of war since World War I is remarkable primarily for being the art of “opposition” (xi-xx). While she doesn’t directly politicize her criticism toward America’s latest wars, she does explicitly express a driving hope that, by studying war poetry, “we can indeed come out of war, in the larger sense, and learn peace” (xx, emphasis original).

Elizabeth Samet was one of the first scholars to write about canonical war literature and its direct application to Afghanistan and Iraq in Soldier’s Heart: Reading Literature through Peace and War at West Point (2007). Samet examines the high stakes of teaching war literature at West Point, and she grounds her book (and a subsequent one entitled No Man’s Land [2014]) in pedagogy and the ever-present fact that her students will soon become participants in war, rather than classroom consumers of war’s representation. A civilian, Samet bridges the gap that follows the soldier-as-witness and civilian-as-auditor construct. Ultimately, her work avoids polemics by emphasizing that, to borrow a phrase from Kenneth Burke, literature can be read as equipment for living, or for her students, as equipment for surviving war.

Mary Favret’s War at a Distance: Romanticism and the Making of Modern Warfare (2010) doesn’t discuss America’s post-9/11 wars, but it returns to the work of Austen, Coleridge, and Wordsworth to examine the marks left there by these authors’ distant relationships with war. In similar manner, The Cambridge Companion to War Writing (2009) attempts a more comprehensive approach to the genre. Edited by Kate
McLoughlin, the *Cambridge Companion* begins with *Beowulf* and ends with Martin Amis in a collective attempt to trace centuries of American and British war literature according to a conflict-specific organization (there is a thirteen page “Chronology” of “Wars and major texts discussed in the volume”).\(^\text{14}\) It is a fine collection of essays, and all of them build on the premise that war’s representation can, if nothing else, “at least keep the record straight,” as McLoughlin puts it in the introduction (1).

McLoughlin followed the *Cambridge Companion to War Writing* one year later with a book entirely of her own in a more thorough examination of war literature, this one entitled *Authoring War: The Literary Representation of War from the Iliad to Iraq* (2011). This second text takes a different tack than the *Cambridge Companion* in that it eschews the “prevailing conflict-specific trend in war studies” (9). Instead, McLoughlin examines a wide range of war literature according to a thematic structure, one that “offer[s] a transhistorical and cross-cultural study of war writing” (19). And finally, last year, Christopher Coker published *Men at War: What Fiction Tells Us about Conflict from the Iliad to Catch-22* (2014). This excellent study focuses on the “existential appeal” of conflict in cultures throughout history, and he points out that it is war’s tenacious grip on human behavior that makes war fiction “so important” (2). As Coker establishes, war

\(^{14}\) The only direct reference to the Iraq or Afghanistan wars is in the final chapter, “The Cold War and the ‘war on terror’” by David Pascoe. The “war on terror,” in Pascoe’s formulation, refers to American cultural fear and anger that followed 9/11. Iraq and Afghanistan are more of an afterthought than the essay’s subject of study (239-249).
fiction is one of society’s most important tools for cultural self-reflection, for it “renders fact back to itself in sharper and shapelier tones” (2).

The same trends have held true for the work published in a number of scholarly journals. Since 1989 the English department at the U.S. Air Force Academy has published its journal, *War, Literature, and the Arts*. Led by editor Donald Anderson, the journal constantly interrogates all voices of war across most forms and styles within the genre. In September of 2010, the journal hosted a conference that included Mark Boal, the producer and screenwriter of *The Hurt Locker*, memoirist and actor Benjamin Busch, and the poet Brian Turner, the author of two collections of Iraq war poetry and an Iraq war memoir. However, lacking a body of fiction about the wars in Iraq or Afghanistan, most of the sessions and presentations at this conference dealt solely with recent war memoirs, recent war movies, or literature from earlier wars.

Many scholars have recently published work along these lines as well, work that focuses solely on experience-based war narratives. Stacey Peebles’ *Welcome to the Suck: Narrating the Soldier’s Experience in Iraq* (2011) traces the ways that “different wars make for different stories,” as she explores the “new war story in prose, poetry, and films about the American soldier’s experience in the Persian Gulf War and the Iraq War” (2). Jon Robert Adams’ *Male Armor: The Soldier-Hero in Contemporary American Culture* (2008) and Jenna Pitchford’s “From One Gulf to Another: Reading Masculinity in American Narratives of the Persian Gulf and Iraq Wars” (2012) both focus on combat
memoirs, and both outline the way masculinity is created and reinforced in American culture by popular conceptions of the U.S. military and the literature it produces.

Other scholarly journals followed suit during the first fifteen years of the twenty-first century; that is, they made do with the war literature they already had on hand. Indeed, almost every literary journal dedicated at least one issue to war or conflict. In the winter of 2003, Canadian Literature published an issue entitled “Literature and War” that focused on previous war literature from North America’s twentieth century wars. In October of 2009, PMLA published a special issue generally subtitled “War.” Contributions from Mary Louise Pratt, Fredric Jameson, and Mary Favret all sought to contend with the nature of language and war in the artistic and political discourse of a country that had been, at that time, at war in Afghanistan for eight years and in Iraq for six. In 2009 the Walt Whitman Quarterly Review focused an issue on Whitman’s wartime poetry collection, Drum-Taps, and the inaugural issue of The Journal of Transnational American Studies was entirely dedicated to Mark Twain’s short piece, “The War Prayer.” Collectively, these journals propose that, knowing what we know about war and conflict and human suffering, the words and works from our past tend to look somewhat different when we read and reread them through the lens of a post 9/11 world.

Today, however, since new novels are finally emerging in significant numbers from our wars in Afghanistan and Iraq, a large portion of it penned by civilians, we are
finally facing a changing tide within the genre.\textsuperscript{15} With this in mind, this dissertation assesses three novels that appeared in 2012 as part the first wave of war novels that specifically deal with American war fighting in a post-9/11 world. Interestingly enough, all three of these tales appeared within months of each other, but each one comes from a different source of authorial wartime experience. An Army machine-gunner wrote *The Yellow Birds* (Kevin Powers); a civilian with no military experience crafted *Billy Lynn’s Long Halftime Walk* (Ben Fountain); and a non-commissioned officer who worked in Army public affairs wrote *FOBBIT* (David Abrams). In 2013 David Lawrence described this trio as “‘The Big Three’ war novels” from our wars in Iraq and Afghanistan (168). To date no extensive or comparative critical treatment of any one of these three novels exists.

*The Ideology of Combat Gnosticism and the Genre of War Literature*

Times are good for war literature and writers of war fiction. Phil Klay recently won the National Book Award for his collection of short war fiction, *Redeployment* (2014), and rarely does a month pass that a major publisher or imprint does not issue

another war novel that takes the conflicts in Afghanistan or Iraq as its subject. As more contemporary war fiction continues to appear, though, one salient concern continues to control the genre: the ideology of what James Campbell calls “combat gnosticism” (203). In a 1999 essay that appeared in *New Literary History*, Campbell writes, “Perhaps the single most important defining element of the genre is this emphasis on personal experience” (205). Requiring or even simply valorizing combat *bona fides* in authors of war literature, Campbell says, has resulted in a critical tradition and epistemological ideology that is unique to war literature, one that has a silencing or controlling impact on the genre as a whole (203). Campbell proposes that when we (readers, critics, and writers) canonize and privilege white, male, combatant voices over all others, the result is not an increased understanding of war, its depravity, its victims, or its agents; rather, it produces an elite *combat gnosticism*, “a construction that gives us war experience as a kind of gnosis, a secret knowledge which only an initiated elite knows” (204). Sixteen years after Campbell made those observations, combat gnosticism continues to be the driving force within the war literature genre.

In one sense America’s post-9/11 wars are no different from any other American wars of the last century; that is, no one has been untouched—civilians or members of the military—by the violence. Even when we consider the widespread apathy with which many Americans consider war today, war’s experience occurs now—as it always has—at all levels of citizenship, both with intense combat or none at all. Regardless, experiential authenticity and a literary obsession with various concepts of accuracy are still major
issues for unsophisticated readers, writers, and critics of American war literature, and it has been this way at least since Stephen Crane published *The Red Badge of Courage* in 1895. Crane was born after the Civil War ended, but without ever pulling a trigger or ducking a cannonball, he produced what Ernest Hemingway called “that great boy’s dream of war that was to be truer to how war is than any war the boy who wrote it would ever live to see” (Intro xvii). Crane never saw war or combat. Hemingway barely did. Yet, despite both men’s literary successes with war writing, today’s dominant critical approach to war literature remains rooted in a popular preference for the very authorial experience they both defied. As Roger Luckhurst explains, “Ethical criticism on the aesthetic representation of war is often pulled between the demand for witness and documentary record versus the call for indirection, aporia or the foregrounding of the impossibility of representation of such traumatic violence” (52). Thus, it is no overstatement to say that war literature is a suffering, and sufferable, genre. McLoughlin explains:

> The literature of war is writing stretched to its limits, demanding extraordinary resourcefulness from those who seek to produce it. Its readers also have significant responsibilities. Understanding how and why truths and lies about war are conveyed, perceiving the status of those who convey them, and appreciating the surrounding ethical issues are nothing less than necessary acts of global citizenship. (Intro xiv)

These issues place heavy demands on any work that might be classified as war literature, and the result is an infinitely capacious genre with critical blind spots and facile appraisals everywhere.
The ideology of combat gnosticism can have disastrous effects on what McLoughlin, in *Authoring War*, considers the “parapolemical” of war literature, a term she uses to refer to “the temporal and spatial borders of war and its adjectival phenomena” (3). In an introduction she wrote for a recently published, three volume anthology designed to help teachers bring war literature into the classroom, McLoughlin agrees with Campbell’s central argument: “Confining the right to write about war to combatants,” she writes, “has the result that those traditionally denied access to the war zone (women, the enemy) are also denied access to the genre,” a genre that “extends far beyond the field of battle” (xiii). In *Coming Out of War*, Stout also criticizes the privilege attending the experience-laden “trench poets” of World War I, arguing that it was and still is “distorting and invalid” (58). Indeed, recognizing this is part of Stout’s overall purpose with her book, for she encourages a turn from witness poetry to “significant but less often recognized body of poetry of the war that eschews the hard-boiled factual mode altogether in favor of meditation, lament, or moral pronouncement” (163).

The very concept of a genre known simply as “war literature” is at least part of the problem. Margot Norris, in *Writing War* (2000), describes war writing as “postgeneric” (23). What war and its corresponding literature have created at the end of the twentieth century, she says, is “a kind of collage assembly of different discursive and representational styles only loosely united by the common topic of war” (8-9). In war literature, all styles and forms and subgenres are lumped together, and while this has led to a rich and extensive tradition in American letters, the genre’s incoherence has never
resolved the running battle that has long existed regarding experience, authenticity, and aesthetics in the criticism that follows. In Norris’s words, “modern war writing” is “fit only to problematize the very concept of genre, to question the representational and ethical fitness of all genres” (23). She is right, of course, but authors and critics of war literature don’t always bother to problematize anything about the way war is represented or discussed.

The fallacious story of battlefield experience is a seductive trait of the war literature genre, and from the “collage” Norris describes above, critics often pluck such a tale and its attendant experience-based authenticity for scholarly attention. Since the ideology (combat gnosticism) that privileges the experience of combat is also the easiest and most obvious guide for authors and critics alike, it enjoys a curious resilience even though, at its core, this ideology ignores the inherent, generic paradox of war literature. McLoughlin summarizes:

The argument for realism in war literature is that the facts must be presented as accurately and objectively as possible. . . Formal decoration and imaginative license have no place in this strict regard for truth. But the realist project falters as soon as it states its terms. “Fact,” “accuracy,” “objectivity,” “truth,” and “realism” are infinitely contestable concepts. (Intro xii)

These may all be contestable elements of any genre, but with war, they somehow never fade into the critical background, and it has been this way for quite some time.

Christopher Coker dates the frustration over what Norris describes as “art’s epistemological inability to totalize, to encompass all aspects of a phenomenon” as beginning with the very birth of the novel (20). Coker writes, “Since the arrival of the
novel in the eighteenth century the tension between historical and fictive accounts of war has become more apparent” (3). Most contemporary critics of war literature, however, trace the battle between modern war and its representation to the birth of modernism followed by Yeats’ famous exclusion of Wilfred Owen from *The Oxford Book of Modern Verse* in 1936. “Passive suffering,” Yeats writes in the introduction, “is not a theme for poetry” (xxxiv). The exclusion angered critics and civilians alike, though, as Yeats explains in a 1936 letter to his editor, Dorothy Wellesley:

> When I excluded Wilfred Owen, whom I consider unworthy of the poets’ corner of a country newspaper, I did not know I was excluding a revered sandwich-board man of the revolution & that some body has put his worst & most famous poem in a glass-case in the British Museum—however if I had known it I would have excluded him just the same. He is all blood, dirt, & sucked sugar stick. (Wellesley 124)

Wyndham Lewis and T.S. Eliot also complained about the banal experience of the soldier and the way it tends to crowd out other forms of art and, in turn, dominate literary criticism. The artist who writes about war, they both objected, is typically forced to wait and watch while war memoirs and other forms of reportage prepared the literary ground for a more imaginative seed.

In 1915 Lewis wrote:

> The quality of uniqueness is absent from the present rambling and universal campaign. There are so many actions every day, necessarily of brilliant daring, that they become impersonal. Like the multitudes of drab and colourless uniforms—these in their turn covered with still more characterless mud—there is no room, in praising the soldiers, for anything but an abstract hymn. These battles are more like ant-fights than anything we have done in this way up to now. (25)
Eliot agreed, at least partially, with Lewis’ argument, suggesting that art stands above and beyond the universal limits and bloody realities of life. In a 1919 issue of *The Egoist*, Eliot argues that the best war poetry eschewed, not necessarily experience, but the reporting of that experience. In a review of Herbert Read’s recently published collection of poetry, he writes that Read’s work is “the best war poetry that I can remember having seen” (39). Eliot goes on:

> It is better than the rest because it is more honest; because it is neither Romance nor Reporting; because it is unpretentious; and it has emotion as well as a version of things seen. For a poet to observe that war is ugly and not on the whole glorious or improving to the soul is not a novelty any more. (39)

As Eliot and Lewis argue, the experience of the soldier is too savage to contribute to the creation of art, and we can suggest the same about much contemporary war literature that trades on traditional tropes of romanticism and suffering. As Yeats writes, “It was easier to look at suffering if you had someone to blame for it” (xxxvii). Memoirs about war in Iraq and Afghanistan trade on this same idea, and the form of the contemporary war memoir has become so ubiquitous that one narrative is nearly indistinguishable from the next.

Before the *Men of 1914*, Walt Whitman predicted that a complex intersection of trends in authorial intention, popular memorializing, and conflicting aesthetics would always plague war writing. In *Specimen Days*, he famously wrote,

> The real war will never get in the books. Its interior history will only never be written—its practicality, minutiae of deeds and passions, will never be even suggested. The actual soldier of 1862-’65, North and South, with all his ways, his incredible dauntlessness, habits, practices, tastes, language, his fierce friendship, his appetite, rankness, his superb strength and
animality, lawless gait, and a hundred unnamed lights and shades of camp,
I say, will never be written—perhaps must not and should not be. (80-81)

What Whitman, Norris, Yeats, Lewis, and Eliot are all suggesting is not that war is too
extreme a subject to be captured in language, nor are they suggesting that the actual
soldier on a Gettysburg picket line, in a World War I trench, or in a Humvee patrolling
the streets of Baghdad has been misrepresented or will be misrepresented in popular
historiography. No, they are discussing the inherent paradoxical issues that face war
literature and its criticism, issues that remain unanswered today. Or, to borrow Norris’
words again, Yeats and Whitman and Lewis are touching on “art’s inability to extend its
power to express subjectivity—its power to make the interiority of lived experience
available to its expressive media” (20). This “inability” can apply to any “lived
experience,” but the experience of combat tends to drown out all other media that may try
to express that subjectivity, and combat gnosticism seems to be the biggest force behind
such a state.

Paul Fussell’s Entrenchment of Combat Gnosticism in Contemporary War Literature

Many of the critics mentioned above note the primacy of personal narrative within
the genre, but few are interested in placing blame for combat gnosticism’s dogmatic
effect on contemporary war literature studies on any one author or scholar. The scholar
who coined the term—James Campbell—does not restrain himself at all. He finds fault
with Paul Fussell’s hugely influential study of war literature, *The Great War and Modern
Memory* (1975). Fussell, Campbell rightly argues, focuses almost exclusively on the
combatant and his irony-laden response to the mass slaughter of modern war during World War I. Fussell uses—as his primary source material—diaries, letters, memoirs, song lyrics, and poetry written mostly by men who were there in order to make his case that the soldiers who experienced the insanity of war ushered in a corresponding emphasis in popular story telling, from the pieties of romanticism to the ironies of modernism.

Fussell points out that the war story is an often-blurred and often-confusing one no matter the similarities between the differing forms and motivations behind war reportage and art: “the memoir is a kind of fiction,” he writes, “differing from the ‘first novel’ only by the continuous implicit attestations of veracity or appeals to documented historical fact” (Great War 336). On the surface, this seems reasonable and accommodating to all voices and all types of war experience. However, as he does throughout his other books, Fussell makes this assertion in order to clear room in his valorization of the combatant’s voice for those combatants who may have chosen to resort to imagination and artifice in their representations of war (one of his reference points is Siegfried Sassoon’s “George Sherston” trilogy in which Sassoon adopts the Sherston persona for what many read as straightforward autobiography). As Fussell says in the afterword of the twenty-fifth anniversary edition of The Great War and Modern Memory, only the “re-readable memoirs and pseudo-memoirs” about “unforgettable military experiences” can faithfully represent war (363). An apologist for any type of fiction that manages to work its way into a combatant’s representation of war, Fussell
does indeed allow artifice into his methodology, but as he sees it, fictive works are useful only if they are accompanied with biographically supported attestations and appeals to actualities and facts, details that can be documented, verified, and catalogued. Then, and only then, Fussell suggests, can any fleeting worries over verisimilitude be dismissed.

In *Wartime: Understanding and Behavior in the Second World War* (1989), Fussell claims, “few novels of the war have succeeded in making a motive, almost a character, of predominant wartime emotion, boredom, or persuading readers that the horrors have not been melodramatized” (291). He also writes that the “best” reflections of war are those that avoid fictive elements like “significant dialogue” because such details are “almost always a sign of *ex post facto* novelistic visitation” (291). Fussell’s observations and superlatives aren’t necessarily improper or incorrect, but they indicate the ways that his entire project is designed to exclude other voices while elevating the combatant’s. He also never bothers addressing the fact that even a secret diary that is absolutely devoid of dialogue can still be untrustworthy as a primary document.

Who should produce art about war and how should one do so? This is essentially the question Fredric Jameson poses in his essay, “War and Representation” (2009). Jameson doesn’t necessarily pose an answer, but he does suggest that war literature shares this debate—between experience and artifice—with many other “collective realities,” categories of lived experience that Jameson lists as “group, nation, clan, class, general will, multitude” (1547). All of these collectivities, not just first-hand experience of combat, he says, “exceed representation fully as much as they do conceptualization
and yet which ceaselessly tempt and exasperate narrative ambitions, conventional and experimental alike” (1547). Jameson discusses two “dialectics” of war writing, one that focuses on “sense-datum” and the other one that deals in “abstraction” (1547).

This is extremely similar to Fussell’s arguments as well, the major difference being that Fussell regards the “gross dichotomizing” that happens in war’s linguistic representation a somewhat necessary tool for combatant writers, the only authors, as he sees it, who can offer any epistemologically worthy version of war’s reality (Great War 82). Fussell largely rejects the possibility that the conventions of literature written by anyone else can offer a “dialectic capable of synthesizing” diverging or converging experiences (Great War 88). Fussell wisely notes that “one of the legacies” of war is a “habit of simple distinction, simplification, and opposition” and that “ambiguity” and “truth” are war’s “casualties” (Great War 87). And he correctly sees “simple antithesis everywhere” in the language of the combatant; however, he argues that the traumatized man in the trenches needs such an antagonistic approach so that he can combat and counteract the estrangement he feels from officers, military staff members, and “everyone back in England” (Great War 94). Who should write about war and how should he or she do so? Fussell’s answer is rather clear. The male combatant is the only one who can write it, and “gross dichotomizing” is the only way for him to do so, for “even if those at home had wanted to know the realities of war, they couldn’t have without experiencing them” (Great War 95).
Thus, Fussell’s version of combat gnosticism grows out of a rather cleverly crafted rhetorical device that Kenneth Burke calls a “heads I win, tails you lose” mechanism (Attitudes 260). As Burke describes it, this is a “device whereby, if things turn out one way, your system accounts for them—and if they turn out the opposite way, your system also accounts for them” (Attitudes 260). Civilians may or may not want to know about war’s experience, but even if they did want to know, Fussell argues that “civilian incomprehension” is inevitable, for war’s “conditions were too novel, its industrialized ghastliness too unprecedented. The war would have been simply unbelievable” (Great War 95). Without entering into an argument regarding the “ghastliness” of one war compared with another, this is a difficult assertion to accept at face value.

As Campbell argues, Fussell conceives of “war” as synonymous with “combat” (204). Campbell says that Fussell doesn’t so much “read texts about the war,” as he reads “the war as a text” (208). This is an important distinction, and when we consider the influence Fussell continues to have on war literature criticism, it somewhat accounts for the inherent problems in the genre itself. Combat gnosticism describes, in essential terms, the trap of authority that drives nearly all aspects of the construction and consumption of the discourses of war. If war is the text to be read, combat gnosticism purports that it can only be read according to one order of that text’s construction. Campbell doesn’t say Fussell or combat gnosticism is wrong, per se; rather, Campbell argues:

[T]his kind of formalist hierarchy signals a further gnostic development, for only the most unmediated statements are those which come straight
from the heart of combat experience without the intervention of literary or poetic form, can be trusted. Fussell wants us to apprehend combat directly; he wants his combat memoirists to transcend language and give the Truth to us directly so that we too will have experienced what it means to know combat. (207)

The issue that this brings to the forefront of the genre as a whole, as McLoughlin reminds in *Authoring War*, is one of authority manipulation according to an unwritten “autobiographical pact” between the messenger and the reader (42). As she says, “First-hand experience or autopsy is indeed the crucial ingredient of authority, legitimacy and credibility in war reporting” (42). However, as Campbell points out, even though combat is indeed a unique experience, that might be all it is; it is “simply an experience among other experiences, a (gendered) voice among other (gendered) voices” (207). Thus, combat gnosticism and the obvious strands of solipsism behind it invite a number of conflicting issues if we lend autobiographical authority too much power in our consumption of war literature. This is the “epistemological trap” of combat gnosticism (Campbell 210). As a dominant ideology, it paves the way for writers and artists of all backgrounds to exploit what McLoughlin calls the “tropes of autopsy” in order to “enhance” anything he or she may write about war (*Authoring* 44). This can have far-reaching implications for the development and growth of a genre.

Campbell’s argument that Fussell’s work entrenched the foundation of combat gnosticism in literary criticism was new in 1999, but he was not the first scholar to find fault with Fussell’s work. Beginning in 1990, literary scholars began criticizing Fussell’s work mainly due to his loose handling of primary evidence, or, as John Wilson puts it, “for leaving things out” (173). Jonathan Marwill, for one, dissects Fussell’s approach,
and he applauds Fussell for treating literature as a cultural artifact. However, as Marwill sees it, Fussell’s self-serving—and at times inconsistent—reasons for privileging combat experience in his work detract from the effectiveness of his scholarship. Marwill admits that Fussell “has every right” to his memory of a war that is “dramatic, deeply felt, and self-revealing” (436). However, Marwill also argues that both of Fussell’s books of war literature criticism (Fussell continued his celebration of the combatant’s voice in a World War II context in Wartime) lack real “insight” because these works should really be read as “autobiography clothed as cultural criticism” (452). Marwill also points out that Fussell’s “cavalier” approach to his sources and the way he tends to “bully his evidence” negate much of his critical authority (440):

While some of the errors of either book may be due to sloppiness or naïveté, most are not. They are, instead, the product of a mind driven to confirm deeply-felt truths, the more deeply-felt because they are truths discovered in wracking experiences, not in books and talk. Once found, such truths are rarely questioned let alone surrendered, and the immediacy, their drama, and often their anguish can make for compelling stories . . . But they are also imperious, intolerant truths, hearing echoes where none exist and blocking out dissonance by the hundred hollow strategies of denial. (441)

Marwill isn’t alone in his criticism of Fussell. In Writing War: Fiction, Gender and Memory (1991), Lynne Hanley carefully deconstructs Fussell’s “stunningly narrow” interpretation of “what constitutes war literature” and bemoans the fact that it “has gone remarkably unchallenged” (26-27). Hanley notes that Fussell’s approach is too elitist, too exclusive: “The locale of war literature is the front, the battlefield,” she writes, “The author of war literature has to have been there. If we accept this definition, there is little we can do but choose among the stories of soldiers” (30-31). Furthermore, she points out
that Fussell’s carefully selected “story of war” is “tailored to obscure the causes of war and to assuage the consciences of the men who declare and fight wars” (30). This, she points out, “would not survive as the dominant account our literature offers of war if it were not the only account of war we recognize” (30). In her 2005 book, *Coming Out of War*, Janis Stout acknowledges that “Paul Fussell has already provided influential overviews of literary responses in English to the two [world] wars in separate volumes each” (xix). However, Stout seeks to “challenge his interpretations,” to include his “muting of the voices of women” and his “disparaging judgment that World War II did not produce any significant body of poetry of distinction” (xix).

It is rare, but some scholars of war literature have recently proceeded without paying Fussell and combat gnosticism any attention at all. Suman Gupta, in *Imagining Iraq: Literature in English and the Iraq Invasion* (2011), examines the ways the invasion and occupation of Iraq has been approached in contemporary fiction, blogs, and drama. Instead of focusing on works of literature written by veterans, however, Gupta focuses on “literary texts derived from and addressed to the civil and civilian sphere” (17). His reasoning is sound:

Accounts of the invasion—including literary ones—given by US and UK soldiers in Iraq were often framed in terms of distinctive presuppositions (in terms of nationalistic agendas, heroism and cowardice, the technicalities of warfare) and given to readers as expressive of a kind of truth or from the moral high ground of lived professional experience . . . Powerfully ensconced conventions now accord to “veterans” a somewhat sanctified status which seems to me questionable: often more to do with perceptions of having served and suffered for the state than to do with evidence of human and intellectual insight. (17-18)
Gupta goes so far as to suggest that we should distrust “authentic” first-hand sources of war literature because they are “sanctified by experience” (18). He never suggests that this decision should be made because non-witness-based war literature is “better” or more “accurate,” it is simply more meaningful and trustworthy because it cannot be treated as hagiographical visions of unreliable reality.\(^{16}\)

Christopher Coker, like Gupta, all but ignores Fussell and combat gnosticism in *Men at War* (2014), a comprehensive study of war literature that is, in my opinion, the best one to be published in decades. Of course, one way that Coker’s assessment of war literature avoids re-entrenching combat gnosticism is by examining texts that do not get any more recent than Joseph Heller’s *Catch-22*. He considers literature as serving a far more important role than providing vicarious experience; rather, as he sees it, war is a “cultural phenomenon” that can help us understand both culture and war if we can examine both institutions’ “existential codes” (9).

One might conclude, then, from these apparent high water marks in recent war literature studies, that Fussell’s epistemological celebration of combat exposure is on the wane, but this is far from the case. Michael Carson suggests that Fussell has been “derided by historians” for decades and that “the wealth of literature historicizing trauma

\(^{16}\) Gupta does not discuss what he calls “accounts of the invasion” of Iraq in his book, but he does admit, “It would, however, be simplistic to push such a distinction too emphatically. To begin with, the person and the profession do not necessarily coincide. There were undoubtedly US and UK soldiers in Iraq who engaged the civil and civilian sphere sensitively in literary texts—the poetry of US soldier Brian Turner in *Here, Bullet* (2005), for instance, often does so” (18).
compares roughly to that of literature surrounding war itself” (“Philosophy”). Even if this is true, no one has really figured out how to negotiate Fussell’s celebrated versions of “historicized trauma,” especially while the conflicts are, for all intents and purposes, ongoing. The genre, today, is as Alex Vernon describes it in his introduction to *Arms and the Self: War, the Military, and Autobiographical Writing* (2005); it is built by a “crossing, blurring, and transgressing of generic boundaries” (31). Yet, despite that blurring, Fussell—and his ideology of combat gnosticism—remains undeniably influential in the genre he helped solidify and perplex.

McLoughlin, for example, admits that the privilege attending the battlefield story confers an undeniable authority on such tales, but she doesn’t take up the issue of whether or not that authority deepens war literature’s efficacy or illuminating power as a cultural artifact. Rather, she writes, “whether this authority results in more insightful, accurate or useful accounts of war is here irrelevant as well as undecidable” (43). That may be so, but her refusal to interrogate, discard, or qualify the impacts of combat gnosticism still somewhat accepts what Gupta’s project eschews, the assumption that a “military account” is necessary in order to “tell civilians what’s what” or to provide any “human and intellectual insight” into war and the nations that fight them (Gupta 18).

Alex Vernon comments on the “interpenetration” of personal experience that is unavoidable for veteran-authors who produce creative works about their war experience and the veteran-critics who assess it:

It should perhaps go without saying that when a scholar with significant life experience in or around war or the military turns to analyzing
autobiographical narratives about war and the military, a certain personal investment obtains. Much is at stake. (33)

I am certainly not immune to this problem, but Fussell and other combat gnosticators somewhat unfairly capitalize on the “personal investment” they have made in war and war’s representation. Even Vernon, by claiming that “much is at stake” participates in a certain fetishization of combat experience. Is there anything more at stake in writing about war than there is for any other subject, in any other genre, in any other attempt to capture the nature of any other vision of reality?

Fussell suggests that his testimonial sources of historiography are the most reliable ones—the most real—for they are the most resistant to distortion later. Such an exclusivist approach leads writers and readers like Fussell to overemphasize the stakes of war’s representation. Perhaps Marwill’s words about the “truths” Fussell expounds about war and war literature are worth repeating and heeding: “they are also imperious, intolerant truths, hearing echoes where none exits and blocking out dissonance by the hundred hollow strategies of denial” (441). This is why it is important to remember a major disclaimer whenever one considers Fussell’s writing and the many who hold combat gnosticism so dear. As Jonathan Marwill begins his essay, “Paul Fussell had a bad war” (431). That is, Fussell never managed a fully objective or academic approach to his own experiences in war. This might be what Vernon is getting at with his comments above. As Wilson and Marwill both point out, Fussell chose the works he did and wrote as he did because he was “pissed-off.”
Fussell says exactly that in “My War: How I got Irony in the Infantry” (1982). When he returned to the United States after serving in World War II, he was “a really pissed-off infantryman, disguised as a literary and cultural commentator” (40). This is the tone Marwill takes issue with: “whether he is right or wrong there is no escaping the suspicion that we are hearing the ‘pissed-off infantryman’ making claims” (436). And those claims were based on the irony Fussell saw in firsthand witness accounts of both world wars, irony that served as his antidote to the dominance of other media that presented all soldiers as “white Anglo-Saxons, officers or aviators, with neat, short hair, clear eyes, gleaming teeth, and well-defined jawlines” (Wartime 128).

I don’t necessarily mind the claims of a pissed-off veteran merely because he is pissed-off. Fussell’s words are, without a doubt, useful reminders today as we parse our way through the growing pile of literature that takes the United States’ post-9/11 wars as its subject. I also don’t think that Fussell’s attitude or tone negates the way he deploys evidence to support those claims. I actually admire what Fussell has to say about his particular approach to war literature, as he put it in the foreword of Thank God for the Atom Bomb and Other Essays (1988):

> Looking over these pieces, many of which are about war, I see that they propose another sort of battlefield, where the enemy consists of habitual euphemizers, professional dissimulators, inadequately educated academic administrators, censors, artistically pretentious third-rate novelists, sexual puritans, rigid optimists and Disneyfiers of life, writers who bitch about the review they receive, humorless critical doctrinaires with grievances (Marxist, Feminist, what-have-you), the sly rhetoricians of the National Rifle Association, exploiters of tourists, and, of course, the President. (9)
This is provocative writing. The problem, however, is that Fussell’s antidote to popular hero worship is no universal panacea. We can no longer trust self-reportage of combat to stay off his list of enemies, if we ever could. Today, many still grab what Fussell grabbed—witness sourced accounts about combat—and try to squeeze similar conclusions from them. Yet, these conclusions aren’t necessarily always available, nor is the reader always willing to perform the same level of analysis as Fussell. That is, irony doesn’t always survive translation from the battlefield to the page. Disillusion is not a given byproduct of combat exposure. So, if the folks Fussell is trying to correct are, as he describes them, the “sentimental, the loony patriotic, the ignorant, and the bloodthirsty,” today’s veteran-author may not necessarily always be the best place to turn, if he ever was (Wartime ix).

The ideology of combat gnosticism doesn’t suggest that there is one answer to the tired but often-answered “what was it like?” question, but it refuses to admit that the factual nature of the answer probably doesn’t really matter. Not only is the phrase “combat experience” an extremely slippery one today, but it is becoming increasingly obvious that the very nature of the “fighting” in Iraq and Afghanistan denies anything we may try to call the “veteran experience.” Any attempt to do so beyond the legalistic rules of official military regulations falls apart as soon it begins. Even within the military there is vast confusion and animosity between those who call themselves combat-experienced and those who don’t. This is nothing new; however, be it a persistent popular demand for immediate war recollection, a dominating (and misguided) patriotism, or the abiding
hatred and fear that still guides much of our post 9/11 metanarratives—today’s reading and writing public is determined to keep combat gnosticism exactly where Fussell put it in 1977.

Fussell and other combat gnosticators may grant that there exists a “necessity of fiction in any memorable testimony about fact” (Great War 337), but combat gnosticism ignores the fact that many voices can speak fictionally about the facts of war and that they can come from any quarter of war’s experience. Everyone has a narrative about war, and combat testimony is but one way to translate experience into art. This is the power of combat gnosticism; it drowns out everything else by a varied manipulation of authority, one conferred by the dubious term “combat” while the epistemology it puts forward as superlative is no less suspicious than the loudest and unadorned pro-war propaganda.

Paul Fussell’s Disciples and the Resilience of Combat Gnosticism

It is difficult to completely discard Fussell’s observations, no matter one’s critical or artistic stance. The entire corpus of Fussell’s war literature criticism can be read as a response to what he saw as the tendency of high-minded scholarship and wartime propaganda to sanitize the Second World War as he knew it. Ultimately, he sought to reveal war as it was rendered by its closest observers, and for these reasons his work is still extremely useful to any critic of war literature. Between 1977 and his death in 2012, he remained quite prolific in war literature circles, publishing book-length, interdisciplinary, first person studies of war and war culture for four decades. Moreover,
his work was and is crucial in bringing attention to the literary worth of many works that had been previously marginalized as unworthy of critical attention. *The Great War and Modern Memory* won the National Book Award and the National Book Critics Circle Award, and in 1991 he edited a Norton anthology, *The Norton Book of Modern War* that is still widely used in classrooms across the country.

As W.D. Ehrhart noted shortly after Fussell’s death in 2012, Fussell is still a “towering figure on the cultural landscape of modern American life” (1). In Fussell’s New York Times obituary, Bruce Weber writes, in no uncertain terms, “Fussell’s influence was huge” (A29). In *The Cambridge Companion to the Literature of the First World War* (2005), Vincent Sherry notes, “[W]ether in spite of or because of the enormity of his assertions, Fussell has set the agenda for most of the criticism that has followed him” (267). John Wilson identifies what critics of Fussell’s work often disregard:

[Critics] fail to notice, or fail to mention, that Fussell is being read, in magazines and books published by Summit or Oxford University Press, while no one outside the academy read anything written by, say, Fredric Jameson. In his essayistic, unacademic, inexact way, Fussell is reaching a large audience, perhaps larger than that reached by any other American scholar. (183-184)

Even Campbell, writing two years before 9/11, doesn’t completely discard Fussell’s scholarly contributions to the criticism of war literature. He is, as am I, particularly appreciative of Fussell’s “iconoclastic stance toward received opinion” (206-207). As Emily Greenwood suggests, Fussell helped create a “meta-genre” of war literature that links “disillusionment” and “disenchantment” with “loss” and “tragedy” (n. pag.).
A celebrated iconoclast, perhaps it is ironic that Fussell was never sacrilegious enough to avoid canonization. Accordingly, Fussell and combat gnosticism are both experiencing a fresh resurgence in popular, scholarly, and artistic conceptions and receptions of war literature. The modern reader’s taste for confession and vicarious experience drives interviewers and critics of war literature alike to beg for the “real” in all representations of wartime experience. Joseph Heller once famously claimed that “Catch-22 is not really about World War II” (“Interview” 357). The “physical details,” he said, “do come out of my own experiences,” but as Heller also said, the novel is really about the Korean War, Joe McCarthy’s political crusades, and the author’s confessed “preoccupation with mortality” (356, 357). Fred Kiley and Walter McDonald argue, emphatically, that this wrinkle in the line between authorial intention and biography exempts Catch-22 from any distracting inquiries into the link between the author’s experience and art:

Although [Catch-22] is set against the background of a major campaign during World War II, it is not about that war, and in that sense not to be pinned wriggling among the great and varied corpus of prose fiction called, unfairly, “war novels.” (v)

Unfortunately, however, neither Catch-22 nor any other war novel seems able to wriggle out from under the forces of combat gnosticism. In 2003, a fourteen-page essay appeared in War, Literature, and the Arts entitled “Joseph Heller’s Combat Experiences in Catch-22” (Scoggins 213-227). Peruse the recent interviews of Kevin Powers or Phil Klay—two veteran-authors of critically acclaimed contemporary war fiction—and it is clear how loudly Fussell’s combat gnosticism resonates with audiences and critics today. One of the
first questions these soldier-authors get is typically about how closely any hint of fiction follows their war experiences. Indeed, since *The Great War and Modern Memory* first appeared in 1975, combat gnosticism has seen periodic renewal by Fussell and other scholars (usually combat veterans) in a countless number of articles and books. Campbell’s comment that “mainstream war poetry critics have thus absorbed rather than critiqued the ideology of their subject, and they continue to replace this ideology to the exclusion of other voices” is most certainly still applicable today (210). What began as “autobiography clothed as cultural criticism” has become dogma.

One of the closest disciples of Fussell’s combat gnosticism is Samuel Hynes, who, in his equally influential book—*The Soldiers’ Tale* (1997)—makes no allowance for non-combatant or even combatant-but-fictive voices in his magisterial analysis of war literature. Hynes’ book was, as Vernon notes, the “first critical work to attempt to shape a definition of the first-person nonfiction war narrative genre” though it “demonstrates the difficulties involved with and ideologies encountered in any effort to define the war narrative genre” (1). Even then, Hynes’ book is still influential enough to be the “most cited text” in Vernon’s entire collection of essays that appeared in 2005 (1-2). In *The Soldier’s Tale*, Hynes does not cite Fussell often, but combat gnosticism is his book’s entire design. In the introduction, Hynes writes, “I have avoided fiction that clearly is fiction, though I have included narratives that are obviously factual but adopt the transparent disguise of invented names” (xv). In short, Hynes’ book is primarily interested in the lived “truths” that can be drawn from non-fictive-seeming first person
accounts, what he calls “personal narratives,” written by men who “were there” (4). In Hynes’ conception, “truth” equals “combat experience.”

The depth and folly of combat gnosticism in Hynes’ critical approach to war literature is clear in his treatment of Thomas Hardy’s first person poem, “The Man He Killed” (Hynes 20). The poem is about the “quaint and curious war” and how the speaker shoots “a fellow down” in a bar instead of buying him a drink (lines 17, 18). “Hardy had never been in a war,” Hynes announces, and then he takes issue with the lines “I shot at him as he at me / and killed him in his place” (20, lines 7-8) because, according to Hynes, getting shot is nothing like that. Rather, he writes, “wounds, when they occur, don’t seem as straightforward or intentional as that” (20). “Real combat” is Hynes’ only concern, and other kinds of war experience don’t qualify as experience at all, regardless differing artistic intentions.

Hynes does admit that his overall purpose with The Soldiers’ Tale is to provide an answer for the worn-out query “What was it like?” Or, in his words, this is the book’s “primary question” (87). This is, to be sure, Fussell’s main concern too, and while I concede that attempting to answer that question is a reasonable and worthy one, as a critical approach it remains extremely parochial and limiting. In its attempt to correct any popular or flawed perception regarding national myths, such an approach might even align quite neatly within any postmodern questioning of dominant metanarratives. But in Hynes’ formulation, answering the question of “what was it like?” merely swaps one convention or one metanarrative for another one. I highly doubt that Hardy was trying to
explain to the folks back home exactly how it felt to shoot a man in a bar during war. But unless he is, Hynes is not interested. I will grant that Hynes had to make selections in order to carve out a subgenre driven by combat gnosticism, but once there, he never steps out of the cocoon of combat testimony, nor does he offer any allowance for any other mimetic source of war literature. He never allows that war’s artistic representation could serve any other purpose than providing a palpable reflection of “real” combat. After all, his subtitle is Bearing Witness to Modern War, as if no one but those who felt “what it was really like to be there, where the actual killing was done” have anything to add to war’s discourse, as if there is nothing meaningful to which a noncombatant can bear witness (xvi).

A number of book-length literary studies of war literature have recently capitalized on and reinforced the hardness of combat gnosticism as a strategic construct. Three books of note are Wyatt Bonikowski’s Shell Shock and the Modernist Imagination (2013), Ty Hawkins’ Reading Vietnam Amid the War on Terror (2012), and Wallis Sanborn’s The American Novel of War (2012). Hawkins’ book, in particular, closely adheres to the tenets of combat gnosticism as he examines the “realist or naturalist aesthetics” of “traditional American War literature” that serve as “a means of bridging the gap between those who have experienced the horror of modern combat and those who have not” (181). Hawkins accepts—at face value—the truism that one had to experience combat in order to understand war, and, accordingly, he examines the ways five books about Vietnam conform to the shape of “Paul Fussell’s innocence-experience-
consideration structure” (91). Ultimately, Hawkins suggests that, as Hynes does, that war literature’s most important function is realized when it comes close to “collapsing the distance between the warrior-hero ideal and the reality of modern combat” for the folks back home (25).

In *The American Novel of War*, Wallis Sanborn cites Fussell exactly once, but like Hawkins, his book still manages to prove that combat gnosticism reigns supreme in his structural study of a thing he calls the “American Novel of War.” Sanborn does make an admirable attempt to categorize the common tropes of fiction that various American authors employ in their war writing, but it is horribly narrow:

> The purpose of *The American Novel of War* is to create and articulate a set of standards by which the American novel of war, both modern and postmodern, can be qualified in classified, and thus critically analyzed. Using a pragmatic set of chronological, philosophical, structural, and stylistic defining characteristics, the study will first categorize the modern and the postmodern American novel. Then, the text will classify the American novel of war using the author’s thematic and content-based defining characteristics of the American novel of war. (1)

To be fair, Sanborn’s intentions are probably worth his efforts. If the accepted wisdom of combat gnosticism continues to reproduce stories of trauma and the invocation of the primacy of reportage and lived war-truth, might not a structural listing of the elements that emerge from and shape this ideology be useful?

Unfortunately, Sanborn doesn’t quite offer a fresh analysis of the genre or a way for one to engage such texts rhetorically. Rather, he follows Hynes’ lead; he creates a list

---

17 The five authors are Philip Caputo, Michael Herr, Larry Heinemann, Bobbie Ann Mason, and Tim O’Brien.
of qualifications one should apply to a work if he wants it to fit it within his newly defined subgenre shaped by the assumptions of combat gnosticism. Hynes massaged what he called “the personal narrative of war” into what he could then suggest was the most important representation of war. Sanborn does the same thing in that he creates a subgenre, what he cleverly calls the “American novel of war” (as opposed to the “American war novel”). A close look, however, reveals that this tightly defined subgenre adopts the same pose of the ideology behind combat gnosticism. It is, yet again, an example of Burke’s “heads I win, tails you lose” rhetorical device (Attitudes 260). “What is a novel of war?” you ask. “One that has these things in it,” Sanborn says. “What has these things in it?” you ask. “A novel of war,” he says.

To qualify as a “novel of war,” Sanborn writes, it must be set inside a war zone, and it must be a “construct of a narrative nature that contain(s) the central thematic elements of a physical war and, in some cases, the results thereof” (11). He provides this test:

Would the novel exist sans the war at hand? If the answer is no, then the novel is not in the study. But, if the essential thematic action of the text is war, if the locus of the guts of the work is the war zone, if the optic of the philosophy of the novel is the view of war, then, obviously, the work is a novel of war. (12)

So, in short, it has to be a novel about combat, delivered from the perspective of a combatant. Sanborn does not say that the author has to be a combat veteran, but he does require that the protagonist is one: “every novel here is by and of combat—in theme, in topic, in element” (12). This is how he is able to allow Silko’s Ceremony and McCarthy’s Blood Meridian into his structural study, two novels he, admittedly, examines with
particular astuteness. Most of the other elements he outlines as existing in all of his novels, though, remain fairly obvious.

“[R]eal, not symbolic” violence is one requirement (64). Something Sanborn calls the “rhetoric of war” is another one (78). But he doesn’t discuss “rhetoric” at all; this label is really his umbrella term to describe the specialized language of militaries during war. To be an “American Novel of War,” then, it has to include some of these types of words. As he summarizes, the “rhetoric of war” refers to “war lingo, war slang, work clichés, or abbreviations and acronyms . . . to refer to war equipage, war nomenclature, war stuff, and war incitation and justification” (13). Sanborn’s categorical qualifications go on from there, from requiring that “American Novels of War” must discuss “tools and equipment and weapons of war” in some way (92), to requiring them to include some sort of death, dying, or destruction scene (14). Sanborn tries to define a genre by listing common tropes that fit within his chosen frame. That effort is probably useful to someone, but only if that person wishes to continue privileging the ways combat gnosticism is established in any work that takes war as its subject.

Vernon’s introduction to *Arms and the Self*, entitled “No Genre’s Land: The Problem of Genre in War Memoirs and Military Autobiographies,” is an excellent assessment of the difficulties that attend any categorical assessment of war memoir and autobiography. However, he doesn’t necessarily conclude, as I do, that combat gnosticism has a drowning effect on noncombatants’ contributions to war literature. Indeed, he rather generously praises the scholarship of war literature for its inclusivity:
“Literary scholarship,” he writes, “consider[s] texts authored by combatants and noncombatants, by men and women, at the front and elsewhere” (5). Vernon does admit that there is a tendency in war literature studies to focus on small categories of war texts, and he points to Lloyd Lewis’ statement in The Tainted War (1985) that his study of “nonfiction narratives by American soldiers from Vietnam” captured “less than 5 percent of all the GIs connected with the tragedy of Vietnam” (3). However, Vernon stops short of clarifying why Lewis chose such a small sample size. As Lewis triumphantly announces in his own introduction, he purposefully excluded the 95% of Vietnam veterans and the narratives of high-ranking officers, sailors, airmen, “fliers,” and any other military member who served in Vietnam in a support role based on the superlatives of combat gnosticism (13). Lewis is correct when he says that his chosen “lower-echelon ground troops experienced the war much differently than did sailors or fliers,” but I’m not so certain about the uniqueness of his following claim, that these voices are collectively more valuable because these soldiers “were to a man thoroughly American, in their virtues as well as their flaws: idealistic, insolent, generous, direct, violent, and provincial” (14).18 The same could be said about countless groups of Americans, combat-experienced or not.

Today, combat gnosticism sometimes survives without Fussell anywhere near its helm, and the idea that combat experience is synonymous with “war truth” has often been

18 This passage from Lewis’ book is borrowed from Philip Caputo’s memoir, A Rumor of War (1977).
accepted to the point that any questioning of it is utterly unfathomable. Geoff Dyer, in an essay titled “The Moral Art of War” (2010), flatly rejects the power of fiction in the wake of recent war reportage written by both soldiers and embedded, professional journalists: “Reportage, long-form reporting,” he writes, “has left the novel looking superfluous” (216). With confidence, he continues, “Given the high quality of reportage about the current conflicts, it is difficult to see what the novelist might bring to the table except stylistic panache . . . and the burden of unnecessary conventions” (217). Dyer doesn’t mention Fussell in his blithe dismissal of fiction, but his appraisal of contemporary nonfiction about the wars in Iraq and Afghanistan rejects any artistic purpose that goes beyond answering the same old question: “What was it like?”

Last year, in an article for The New Yorker, George Packer provided what is probably the clearest and most well known recent commentary on contemporary war literature, and he managed to re-entrench combat gnosticism in yet another generation of war fiction. Indeed, he begins his essay with a quote from Fussell: “Every war is ironic because every war is worse than expected” (69). This certainly holds true for our wars in Iraq and Afghanistan; yet, as Packer unpacks the “irony” as he sees it appearing in the recent wave of fiction that has emerged from these wars, he follows Fussell’s celebration of combat gnosticism to the letter. Not only does he suggest that an author’s combat role in Iraq is the only thing that gives that literature its requisite foundation, but he directly equates that experience with “truth”: “War opens an unbridgeable gap between soldiers and civilians,” he writes, “There’s no truth in war—just each soldier’s experience” (70).
Campbell summarizes the lasting influence of Fussell’s work and combat gnosticism on scholarship:

[T]he scholarship in question does not so much criticize the poetry which forms its subject as it replicate[s] the poetry’s ideology . . . [S]uch an ideology has served both to limit severely the canon of texts that mainstream First World War criticism has seen as legitimate war writing and has simultaneously promoted war literature’s status as a discrete body of work with almost no relation to non-war writing. (203)

Packer shows us how, despite Fussell’s many detractors, there is little urgency to assess new war literature without capitulating first to the ideology of combat gnosticism, an ideology that remains deeply rooted in what Richard Rorty describes as the “doctrine of truth as correspondence,” one that ignores any notion that the link between physical reality and fictional discourse is unclear and indistinguishable (15).

_The Anxiety of Authenticity in the Writing of War Literature_

One of the biggest problems with combat gnosticism within the war literature genre is that it influences both readers and writers. It affects the way literature is received and which literature is published or adapted into movies or collected in anthologies, and it changes the way both veterans and civilians write—both creatively and critically.

Norris writes:

The postgeneric condition, does not obviate the need of war writing to make generic choices nevertheless, even though these choices will be fraught with compromises and complicities, and with the danger of imposing significances preordained by genre upon historical experience. (23-24)
She is right of course. “Fraught” choices, for Norris, make up a long list of stumbling blocks for war writers and their critics. Norris notes that, in a Bakhtinian sense, war writers—perhaps even more so than readers—are prone to viewing “reality through the eyes of the genre,” and the heavy generic hand of war literature, one held in place by combat gnosticism, makes what Norris calls the “intertexted process” of war writing an anxious one indeed (24). In the last several years of war writing that takes Afghanistan and Iraq as its subject, it is clear that novelists, poets, journalists, and scholars are all “fraught” with the “generic choices” they have to make.

Some of those choices and anxieties are linked directly to the gate keeping role that many veteran-authors or veteran-critics assume regarding war literature. Roxanna Robinson, a civilian, succinctly describes the situation: “the military is famously proprietary about war writing” (SR8). Candace Pipes reports that her students at the Air Force Academy “tend to invalidate ‘fictional’ accounts of war—one wrong use of a term, one inaccurate historical detail and they want to write off the author’s efforts” (143). David Lawrence unapologetically agrees: “service members can be very persnickety when it comes to nomenclature, slang, uniform wear, etc.” (96). As Randy Brown, a popular blogger who often discusses war literature, triumphantly puts it, “nothing breaks down the fourth wall for a veteran faster than a badly drawn tank” (n. pag.).

Another blogger, a professor of English at West Point and a retired Army officer named Peter Molin, crafts extensive commentaries about contemporary war literature for his blog Time Now. Therein he rarely fails to note military minutiae that might be
incorrectly detailed in a movie or a novel. In the film *The Messenger* (2009), Woody Harrelson and Ben Foster play casualty notification officers in the Army, and Molin writes that he “couldn’t help noticing the goofiness with which the Foster and Harrelson characters wear their Army patrol caps” (n. pag.) In his review of Aaron Gwyn’s *Wynne’s War* (2014), Molin can’t keep himself from pausing his review long enough to point out that “it’s inconceivable that the Green Berets wouldn’t have ‘TACSAT’ radios and satellite phones to help them out of their jams” (n. pag.).

This May, veteran-author Matt Gallagher published a review of Anne Hathaway’s one-person play—*Grounded*—that debuted in New York City. The play is about a pilot of unmanned aerial vehicles who lives in Vegas, flies her aircraft from a trailer in the middle of a Nevada desert, and pushes buttons that unleash bombs on the other side of the globe. Gallagher admits to walking into the performance “still holding onto a ground soldier’s sensibilities and stereotypes” (n. pag.). That is, Gallagher adopts a rather skeptical tone about this war story and what it can tell us about war, and he pauses his otherwise reasonable review to note, “The play’s devotion to military verisimilitude is admirable” (n. pag.). In a somewhat patronizing tone, Gallagher assures us that “the patches are in all the right spots” on Hathaway’s flight suit, that “the raw, stunted lingo rings genuine,” and that “Hathaway’s pushups more than meet military regulation” (n. pag.).

I’m no better; I groan every time a film turns the military salute into some sort of deeper-than-words-could-ever-express gesture of respect instead of its everyday,
mechanical sign of greeting. The complaints and approvals above, however, are concerned with more than correctness. They are more self-serving. Do we really need a military professional to tell us if a beret looks goofy or if a patch on a flight suit looks right? The iconoclast in the field of war literature studies, today, might be the civilian or the combatant, the support troop or the critic who ignores the urge to make such irrelevant asides so that he or she may analyze war’s representation rhetorically without becoming mired in irrelevant details of “verisimilitude” in a work’s construction of reality.

This type of critique might be why recent writers of war fiction have developed—as Emily Tredowe admits in an article for *The Daily Beast*—“insecurities around authority . . . when writing about war” (n. pag.). The anxieties could come from any of the issues Norris references above, but combat gnosticism seems especially forceful here especially when it is accompanied by a keenly felt fear of disrespecting military members, a fear of inaccuracy, or the artistic intent to create plausible characters and settings. Tredowe, a civilian war novelist, points out that among war fiction writers, the ideology of combat gnosticism drives a “hierarchy of ‘how tough was your war,’ a familiar if unspoken one-upping among people” between those who have or have not “been there” (n. pag.). Ben Fountain, another civilian author, notes the high stakes he felt were close at hand when he wrote *Billy Lynn’s Long Halftime Walk*:

A number of people have a problem with me writing about soldiers and veterans when I haven’t had the experience. I have a lot more sympathy with their point of view than you might expect. It was a powerful thing in me to try to write that book. I did it for better or worse. It’s not something
to be taken lightly. It’s an important thing and a necessary thing as a writer to always be reaching outside of yourself. They say write what you know. But what you know is rarely enough. You need to know more. But you’ve got to approach it with a lot of respect and humility. You owe it to the people and experience you’re trying to understand. It’s not a casual thing.

(qtd. in North)

According to Tredowe, the anxiety even got to National Book Award winner Phil Klay, a former Marine and veteran of Operation Iraqi Freedom. Klay was no longer in the military during the second battle of Fallujah, but he wrote a short story set there anyway. During a public reading of that particular story, someone began laughing loudly in the back of the room. Klay’s immediate worry was that the laugh was a “scoff” because “he’d gotten it all wrong” (Tredowe). Yet, as Molin relates on his blog, at a recent conference, Klay spoke of the “thick knowledge” he worked to gain before he was comfortable with writing war fiction that didn’t come directly out of his own firsthand experience (n. pag.). Apparently, even with “thick knowledge” the anxiety of authenticity never quite leaves a war writer. Roxanna Robinson mentions that during a radio interview she was doing to promote her novel *Sparta*, someone sent in an email that read, “This woman has never been in combat and knows nothing about it” (SR8). One wonders if she would have received the same comment if the circumstances of her life had been withheld.

Burke says that different “strategies” can arise from any attempt to “remain realistic,” and that some writers and readers forget “that realism is an aspect for foretelling” (*Philosophy* 299). Thus, war writers and their critics often search for the real
and make the mistake of what Burke says is taking the idea of reality “as an end in itself” (299):

[The Author] is tempted to do this by two factors: 1) an ill-digested philosophy of science, leading him mistakenly to assume that “relentless” naturalistic “truthfulness” is a proper end in itself, and 2) a merely competitive desire to outstrip other writers by being “more realistic” than they. (299)

Some authors of contemporary war fiction, like Katey Schultz and Helen Benedict, politely sidestep the demands that the purveyors of combat gnosticism might demand from their work. Schultz—a civilian and author of Flashes of War (2013)—reports that she understands “the desire to nit-pick, especially when someone’s writing on ‘your turf,’” but, she says, “ultimately, creative writing has nothing to do with the impulse to be perfectly accurate” (qtd. in Pipes 143). Benedict—a civilian and author of the war novel Sand Queen—suggests that “only two questions matter when it comes to reading or evaluating a war novel: is it honest? And does it glamorize war?” (n. pag.). I applaud both convictions, but there remains an overarching unease regarding combat authority and accuracy that determines which writers write and the way they do so.

Packaging Combat Gnosticism

In a 1989 essay for The Atlantic, Fussell speculated that, referring back to his lifelong thesis about combatant writing, “The troops’ disillusion and their ironic response, in song and satire and silent contempt, came from knowing that the home front then (and very likely historiography later) could be aware of none of these things” (“Real” 34). The contempt that bruised and battered soldiers on the front lines feel for
those who remain safe and unaware at home is a common refrain in the military during war and peace; however, Fussell’s parenthetical jab at “historiography later” is not only self-pitying, it is patently wrong. Fussell seems to be well aware of this, but he follows one truism—we are the only ones who know what it’s like—with another one—it is impossible for us to tell you. This sophistic circular logic creates an insular place for combat gnosticism to thrive and grow, and it allows people like George Packer to confidently assert that the “gap” between soldiers and civilians is “unbridgeable” (70).

Why should that “gap” be any more insurmountable than any other lived experience?

I am reminded of a joke that my grandfather—a crewmember in a World War II Navy dive-bomber—once told me:

How many vets does it take to screw in a light bulb?

You wouldn’t understand; you weren’t there.

In The Great War and Modern Memory, Fussell discusses this rhetorical device in detail:

Logically, one supposes, there’s no reason why a language devised by man should be inadequate to describe any of man’s works. The problem was less one of “language” than of gentility and optimism; it was less a problem of “linguistics” than of rhetoric . . . The real reason is that soldiers have discovered that no one is interested in the bad news they have to report. What listener wants to be torn and shaken when he doesn’t have to be? We have made unspeakable mean indescribable: it really means nasty. (Great War 184)

But is this truly the case? What “nasty” elements of war are we yet to encounter in war literature or personal narrative? Is anything truly “unbelievable” or “indescribable”?

Marwill wonders the same thing:

If it is unpreparedness, ineffectual weapons, blunders, harassment, booze and sex, deprivation, sadism, and brutality, most readers will be surprised
by the claim. Have not these realities, or proximate versions thereof, come
to our attention? . . . We may not know every instance or kind of savagery,
we may undercount the combatants who suffered permanent psychological
wounds, but we are not unacquainted with these things. (435)

Twenty-five years and at least three undeclared wars after Marwill wrote that, we are
even more acquainted with these things. As the movie version of American Sniper has
proven, there are plenty of people interested in the bad news that a combatant has to
report, even when that “nasty” news lacks any trace of irony.

In Authoring War, McLoughlin grants that such protestations of
incommunnicability in war literature “adumbrate catastrophe without articulating it,” and
she generously suggests that such a literary technique can be an important device, one of
“adynaton,” which she defines as the expression of “the impossibility of addressing
oneself adequately to the topic” (152). But in a combatant tale designed to do nothing but
provide vicarious experience, rarely are such philosophical concerns appropriate or
reasonable. As McLoughlin continues, “So what motivates these immediately belied
disclaimers, these wordy disavowals of words? Some instances may be no more than
conventional protestations of false modesty, decorous commonplaces of self-deception”
(152). This is the most likely explanation to me, but McLoughlin doesn’t relent. She goes
on to offer that war writers use such disclaimers and diversions to indicate an exploration
of “negative space” or to delve into the literary concept of “the sublime” (153). That
might be true of some authors and some works of war fiction, but it is unlikely for the
bulk of the material that now forms the latest iteration of combat gnosticism in war
literature.
If a veteran-author or a critic argues that war writing is primarily useful as a tool to tell civilians “what it was like,” then a writer’s claim that he or she cannot or will not write about war is almost too convenient, excessively self-serving, clichéd, or otherwise meaningless. Maureen Ryan, in *The Other Side of Grief* (2008) calls this excuse-making tendency in war writing the “You Had to Be There” aphorism, one that was exhaustively repeated in much of the Vietnam literature she examines in her book:

It is this concept that privileges firsthand accounts of grunts who survived the jungles of Vietnam, and, paradoxically, that accounts for the massive and endless testimony that they offer us. You had to be there. Most of you weren’t, so you can’t understand. But we’ll try nonetheless—over and over—to explain it. (17)

This cliché is a curious byproduct and tool of combat gnosticism. It suggests a local epistemology that can only be accessed by the individual who graced a battlefield, but it also asserts that experienced knowledge lives in a liminal “truth-space” that will forever remain incommunicable, even though, of course, the war writer often goes right ahead and communicates that experience. It is a Burkean “heads I win, tails you lose” device.

As Ryan points out, “The withholding of the sacrosanct combat experience only reinforces the truism that you had to be there” (23). Such a device also completely disregards the reader. How is one supposed to respond but with a sympathetic nod?

New adherents to the tenets of combat gnosticism that trade on the “You Had to Be There” aphorism are appearing every day. In a recent essay for the website *Blue Force Tracker*, a freelance writer named Nolan Peterson, who publishes on a wide range of war-related topics, makes the reasonable observation that “talking about war is like trying to speak another language” (n. pag.). It certainly is, at least for some people. However, as
Marwill reminds us about the audience of war literature, “Soldiers, prisoners, survivors: they do not need others to instruct them about their experience” (433). Still, this doesn’t stop Peterson from plainly stating, “great writing about war can only come from those who have been there. Only they possess the personal experiences from which to draw to tell something about themselves they don’t already know” (n. pag.). Pronoun-antecedent confusion notwithstanding, his confident remark displays how silencing the rhetoric of combat gnosticism can be.

As McLoughlin points out, “there is something counterintuitive about the literature of war,” and this extends to combat gnosticism and the popular suggestion that any extreme experience is un-writeable (Intro, Literature xiv). Writing is difficult, and, to be sure, writing about emotionally traumatic scenes rooted in experience is probably even more so. But both are possible. McLoughlin continues:

the literature of war is writing stretched to its limits, demanding extraordinary resourcefulness from those who seek to produce it. Its readers also have significant responsibilities. Understanding how and why truths and lies about war are conveyed, perceiving the status of those who convey them, and appreciating the surrounding ethical issues are nothing less than necessary acts of global citizenship. (xiv)

Still, even though Marwill reminds us that an “uncompromising naturalism is but one means for rendering reality,” combat gnosticism remains dominant in the genre of war literature (444).

Fiction editors and publishers are at least partially culpable because capitalizing on the circularity of the You Had to Be There truism can be extremely fruitful. Northup Frye summarizes how Wyndham Lewis developed a deep disdain for the popular war
novels and war memoirs of his day, what he considered vulgar approximations of the “new subject matter” of modern war. According to Frye, Lewis saw the artist of his day dominated and

imitated by shrewd and clever craftsmen who swarm together in schools, movements, tendencies, groups, and generally in what Lewis calls phalanteries. These cliques, who are naturally on their guard to see that no real genius is given a hearing, vulgarized art into movements which become, like vulgarized science and philosophy, essentially political phenomena. (*Northrop* 180)

Today, the reading public still wants the combat account, and the soldier-become-writer is more than happy to oblige. New “phalanteries” have popped up online, in community-supported workshops, and in universities and writing programs across the country. As Michiko Kakutani explains, “M.F.A. programs, veteran’s writing workshops and therapy-based writing programs used to treat post-traumatic stress disorder have tended to emphasize directness of expression and more naturalistic approaches” (A1). This is no doubt a good thing for veterans who want to learn how to write and publish and thereby heal. I do not dispute that at all. Whether or not these phalanteries actually produce works of art that effectively relate enduring visions about war and culture is less certain.

Wyndham Lewis once wrote, “Truth has no place in action” (qtd. in Edwards 141). In *The Things They Carried* Tim O’Brien writes, “I did not look at my work as therapy, and still don’t” (179). In a 2012 editorial that appeared in *Poetry* magazine, Yusef Komunyakaa agrees: “Poetry cannot serve as an emotional bandage for the blood and guts of warfare,” he writes, “such an industry is doomed to dishonor the dead as well as the living” (145-146). Art may indeed provide vicarious experience, and creating it
may provide therapy for trauma, but combat gnosticism suggests that these purposes trump all others. Over the last few years, the genre has witnessed an explosion in the number of literary outlets and venues that are exclusively open to veteran-authors. To be sure, combat gnosticism has provided a wider opportunity for many veterans to publish their stories and find a wider audience. It has certainly helped me publish some of my own short fiction. However, the insularity of these phalanteries results in an entirely myopic literary landscape. Its exclusionary model creates a civilian sphere that is either apathetic to what is written or reluctant to participate by contributing additional work. I once asked a fellow graduate student at the University of Denver what he thought of a story I wrote about flying in Afghanistan, “What can I say?” he asked, “This is your world.”

In 2006 the National Endowment for the Arts published a collection of creative work written by troops who were then currently serving (a requirement for consideration in the collection) in the wars in Iraq and Afghanistan. The collection—entitled *Operation Homecoming*—is impressive in its scope and widely inclusive with its content, but the bulk of the works remain rooted in a collective goal of merely recording the event of war with the attendant stamp of authority that a veteran-author inherently lends such work. On the cover of the collection is a photo of three dirty soldiers in camouflage, leaning against a dirty tracked vehicle, reading letters from home. The message is clear: this art is only useful as a special communiqué between the home front and the war front.
Another collection of war fiction—*Fire and Forget: Short Stories from the Long War* (2013)—packages its content just as *Operation Homecoming* does. While it contains a wide range of short war fiction from a variety of scenes from Iraq to New York, and while only three of them directly describe combat, the jacket and the preface pander to the same reading public that kept *American Sniper* on the *New York Times* Bestseller List for forty-two weeks in a row and made the cinematic adaptation of Chris Kyle’s “autobiography” a box office hit. The back jacket establishes the bare minimum biographical qualification of authorial experience: “What makes these stories even more remarkable is that all of them are written by men and women whose lives were directly engaged in the wars.” Such resume-parading is an example of what, in *A Toxic Genre* (2011), Martin Barker calls “reality guarantees” (118). Once such experience is established, the story can continue without demanding anything else from the reader beyond redemptive sympathy.

E.L. Doctorow’s blurb emblazons the cover, hailing the authors as not just veteran writers, but “warrior writers” whose “necessary collection” is “about not forgetting.” In the preface, the editors write, “Truth, *truthiness*, in this mass media cacophony we live in, comes up something for grabs. Well, here’s some. Grab it. We were there. This is what we saw. This is *how it felt*. And we’re here to say, it’s not like you heard in the stories” (xv). That phrase—“whose lives were directly engaged in the wars”—screams historical mitigation, even with its intended vagueness. “Whose lives,” you might ask, “aren’t directly ‘engaged’ in the wars?” Yes, the vast bulk of Americans have been insulated
from the realities of the wars in Iraq and Afghanistan, but combat gnosticism is at least partially to blame for that. And yes, an all-voluntary military force means that many Americans have no personal or familial connection to war or the military, so there is certainly a civilian-military divide that can get in the way of understanding. But this is true of many cross-cultural exchanges. As Elizabeth Samet relates in No Man’s Land, a friend of hers once said, “The country has been at war my entire adult life, and you’re the only one I know with any personal connection to the military” (15). Kakutani observes:

> With no shared sacrifices being asked of civilians after Sept. 11 and a ban (with origins in the first Gulf War and lifted in 2009) on photographing coffins on military bases, it’s no surprise that the disconnect between life “over there” and life “back here” has emerged as a central theme in much of today’s war writing. (A1)

However effective fiction can be in resolving some, all, or none of these societal problems, the suggestion that understanding can only be achieved through a one-way transmission of experiential knowledge is unconvincing at best and ethically wrong at worst. I am not questioning the individual worth of any one of the stories in either collection. I also appreciate the playfulness on the idea that there may not be any representative truth—beyond “truthiness”—in any war story. I do, however, question the way that the preface claims the rewards of admitting the subjectivity of “truth” while also eagerly claiming the benefits of combat gnosticism.

This is why, as Kakutani describes it, much of the recent war fiction that has been published in the United States has a “chamber music quality . . . fable-like allegories or keyhole views . . . to open small windows on these conflicts” (A1). Combat gnosticism might also explain why, as Kakutani points out, no “big, symphonic Iraq or Afghanistan
“novel” has been published to date (A1). While we all wait for the cycle of war literature’s production to creak along, combat gnosticism determines (and hampers) how war literature is written and packaged and received. Meanwhile, experiential authority stands as the most important commodity to be debated and discussed while dissent and civilian perspectives on war are pushed to the critical background. Maybe this unflagging expectation for experiential authority in the contemporary American war story is why only two stories written by an American, in English, about Afghanistan or Iraq have appeared in *The New Yorker* since 9/11, despite the magazine’s long history of publishing other “types” of war fiction.\(^{19}\) Yes, it takes time for war fiction to appear, but—perhaps—the temporal distance between war’s event and its representation in fiction is necessary primarily so that the dominant cloud of combat gnosticism can disperse.

When *Operation Homecoming* appeared in 2006, it did draw a small number of unfavorable criticisms. Like Suman Gupta, poet and Vietnam veteran Yusef Komunyakaa distrusts the very nature of such testimony itself:

> We had our soldier poets in Vietnam also; and for the most part, they penned what I call “the boondock doggerel of blood and guts” which was printed by the *Stars and Stripes*. Of course, this was aimed at boosting the morale of the troops. War means to kill or be killed. The more immediate soldiers are to their acts of violence, the less creditable they are as witnesses. (144)

---

\(^{19}\) The first story is “Kattekoppen,” written by Will Mackin, and it appeared in the 11 March 2013 issue. According to the “Contributors” section, “Will Mackin is a veteran of multiple deployments to both Iraq and Afghanistan” (2). Combat pedigree matters, even to *The New Yorker*. The second story, a tale about a kleptomaniac National Guardsman in New York, is “Peacetime” by Luke Mogelson.
Elliot Colla goes so far as to imagine a “military-literary complex” and an institutional conspiracy at work behind the collection (n. pag.). Colla fears that, somewhere behind *Operation Homecoming* lurks an institutionalized and “coordinated plan” that involves “military censors or the collusion of writers, publishers, and book reviewers,” all of which pose an imminent threat to the artistic writing of historiography (n. pag.). Hyperbole aside, Colla’s point about soldier testimony in both fiction and non-fiction accounts of war (he calls it “embedded literature”) is a sound one:

Americans need to face a likelihood far more disturbing than the existence of any military-industrial conspiracy, namely that we accept embedded literature because we prefer stories about “us” and not “them.” We accept tales of combatant privilege because we would rather imagine ourselves being the ones holding the guns than those who are not. This may be more plausible than the existence of a military-literary complex, but it is also far more troubling. (n. pag.)

Interestingly enough, Komunyakaa and Colla both sound a lot like Fussell. Here is Fussell in the afterword of the twenty-fifth anniversary edition of *The Great War and Modern Memory*:

> I hoped that the effect of the book on [my American readers] might persuade them that even Gooks had feelings, that even they hated to die, and like us called for help or God or Mother when their agony became unbearable. (369)

Such is the surviving ambivalence that Fussell’s contribution to the study of war literature pushes to the forefront of its creation, reception, and critical analysis. Very few readers or critics or artists should find fault with Fussell’s hope that literature and criticism can combine and illuminate the common humanity that is destroyed by war. The fact remains, however, that though Fussell helped to grow a genre linked by nothing but
subject, and though he may have ushered in a focus on witness art, his influence and the ideology of combat gnosticism that survives him still unduly dictate what literature is allowed to emerge from the subjectivities of modern war and the way those subjectivities are discussed and accepted. This impact, I argue, is to the genre’s detriment. Once the iconoclast, Fussell is now the dust-covered sage, the combat-experienced scholar who fostered an ideological inertia—combat gnosticism—that should be, but really isn’t, waning. As Marwill reminds us, “A method suitable to discourse about a discrete, self-contained text does not, however, work well with an inherently unboundaried reality” (444).

In If I Die in a Combat Zone, Tim O’Brien asks, “Can the foot soldier teach anything important about war, merely for having been there?” (22-23). He answers his own question: “I think not. He can tell war stories” (23). So can everyone else. Fussell, Hynes, and other combat gnosticators force a boundary around one slice of war’s representation, but their source material never provides sufficient proof that such a boundary is necessary or representative. Indeed, for every ironic song lyric Fussell cites and every diary entry he voyeuristically scours, one can just as easily locate similar songs and similar private expressions of experience that fall on precisely the opposite side of disillusion.

Fussell would probably agree with W.D. Ehrhart’s pronouncement that “knowledge without experience is at best an empty thing, at worst a disaster” (6).
Kenneth Burke would likely have added the following comment about the often-disregarded distinction between observation, art, and epistemology:

Still, there is a difference, and a radical difference, between building a house and writing a poem about building a house—and a poem about having children is not the same thing as having children by marriage. There are practical acts, and there are symbolic acts (nor is the distinction, clear enough in its extremes, to be dropped simply because there is a borderline area wherein many practical acts take on a symbolic ingredient). (Philosophy 8-9)

This is the problem with war literature and any comprehensive approach to it as long as combat gnosticism reigns supreme. It isn’t that all war writing deserves similar treatment because it all sits under the same generic umbrella; it’s that much of it doesn’t belong there in the first place. Ultimately, this is what Fussell and Hynes and others like them tried to “fix.” They worked extremely hard to sufficiently establish taxonomic boundaries for small categories; the problem is that they did so by trading in superlatives, exclusions, and certainty.

Vernon describes projects like Hynes’ and Fussell’s:

Of course, one must limit the field somehow, and this limitation makes sense; the term “war memoir” for most of us instantly produces images of line combat, not desk duty . . . The definition of war stories that includes (male) combat narratives is not wrong, critically speaking, but it should be understood for what it is—a subgenre of autobiographical writing about war, armed conflict, military service, and the involved societies and cultures. (2-3, emphasis original)

Yes, there are many ways to categorize one’s way out of combat gnosticism. The Library of Congress classifies war autobiography and war narratives that are styled as memoirs under the broad “Personnel Narratives” subject heading. The massive two-volume Encyclopedia of Life Writing (2001), edited by Margareta Jolly, includes separate entries
for “War Letters,” “War Diaries and Journals,” conflict specific “War Writings,” and “Military Autobiography,” all of which could also fit neatly within the separate entries for “Trauma and Life Writing” or “Travel Narratives.” In 1942 Ernest Hemingway broke up the sections of his war literature anthology according to Clausewitz’s sections from his famous treatise, On War. Thomas Riggs, the editor of The Literature of War (2012), divides his three volume anthology into “Approaches,” “Experiences,” and “Impacts” (xvi). In Authoring War, Kate McLaughlin goes with “Credentials,” “Details,” “Zones,” “Duration,” “Diversions,” and “Laughter” (xii). In Men at War, Christopher Coker examines his primary texts by focusing on five “character types”: villains, victims, heroes, warriors, and survivors (13).

Hemingway once suggested that war literature should never seek to replace experience. This, he argues, is a foolish and ultimately useless expectation. What war literature can do, however, is “prepare for and supplement experience. It can serve as a corrective after experience” for both the reader and the writer (Intro xxvii). Combat gnosticism ignores the forward-looking nature of this nuance. Or, as Jameson writes, the “dilemmas of representation” regarding war are “navigable only by formal innovation . . . and not by any stable narrative convention” (1547). Indeed, in Welcome to the Suck (2011), Stacey Peebles suggests that most of the early literary works about America’s post-9/11 wars “transcend categorization” (21). This leaves the critic of contemporary war literature in a bit of a bind. Norris describes the dilemma:

**Significant “truth” resides elsewhere than in facticity. . . . [T]here is an opening, then, for arguing that art’s responsibilities might include the**
exposure of historical writing’s own inability to totalize, whatever tonnage of facts it brings to bear on its telling of war, and to explore the status of history as historiography, inherently as textual, narrative, and metonymic as art itself. . . . Totalization—bringing the layers of war narrative together in a coherent whole—may be not only an impossibility but perhaps also, in some respects, and undesirability. (22-23)

One is left wondering: short of categorizing according to theme, authorial intention, authorial biography, or conflict, what is the literary critic to do? What are we to do if we fear minimizing the enormity and tragedy of war and the sacrifices of war’s agents and the sufferings of war’s victims? What are we to do if the “dilemmas of representation” Jameson speaks of tend to result in every expression of war’s experience being treated as art just because it is has been expressed, over and over, by the ones who did the experiencing? What are we to do if combat gnosticism continues to demand that all war stories, not just personal narratives, memoirs, and autobiographies carry a flavor of authenticity or to be experientially “true”? 
Chapter Two: Kenneth Burke’s Scapegoat: a Method for War Literature

I have never seen anyone turn from *The Iliad* a-froth with desire for slaughter. (Kenneth Burke, *Philosophy* 239)

Kenneth Burke wrote the following words more than seventy-five years ago, but they still resonate today:

The great allurement in our present popular “inspirational literature,” for instance, may be largely of this sort. It is a strategy for easy consolation. It “fills a need,” since there is always a need for easy consolation—and in an era of confusion like our own the need is especially keen. (“Literature” 298)²⁰

Combat gnosticism and utilitarian concepts regarding the purpose of war literature have resulted in a genre that often feels stagnant, vapid, and repetitive. Likewise, criticism of contemporary war literature often has little to say about the social value of war literature beyond passing commentary on how close a work comes to accurately reflecting lived experiences of war. That, or the critic of contemporary war literature rests his or her commentary on the solace that accompanies common tales of war trauma and war tragedy, tales that are often praised for illuminating the human cost of war.

²⁰ “Literature as Equipment for Living” was first published in *Direction* in April of 1938. It was also reprinted in *The Philosophy of Literary Form*. All citations refer to this later version.
Indeed, in an important essay that appeared this last December in *The New York Times*, Michiko Kakutani could do little else with her piece but note which voices of “soldiers and reporters” had managed to find publication homes for their work, work that succeeded because it was able to “slam home a sense of what the wars were like on the front lines” (A1). As Burke writes in his essay, “War and Cultural Life” (1942), “war does compel a people to conceive the reality of forces in much more realistic terms than need prevail under conditions of peace” (404). Kakatani’s title—“Humans Costs of the Forever Wars, Enough to Fill a Bookshelf”—shows how, despite the growing number of fictional works that assess America’s post-9/11 wars, criticism is hamstrung by literature that is hamstrung by the ideology of combat gnosticism.

Alex Vernon, in his introduction to *Arms and Self* (2005), remarks that since autobiography is not immune to fictive elements, “we are justified” in assuming a critical position of “considering both [fiction and nonfiction] as narratives simply, narratives that can only be treated as such” (31). Vernon goes on to add the significant caveat that we can only do so “as long as we acknowledge and account for the author’s generic intention” (31, emphasis original). This is a reasonable enough suggestion, since war literature often does ignore Michel Foucault’s suggestion, in “What is an Author?” (1969), that, “In writing, the point is not to manifest or exalt the act of writing, nor is it to pin a subject within language; it is, rather, a question of creating a space into which the writing subject constantly disappears” (283). So, accounting for authorial intention may indeed resolve *some* of the problems that attend combat gnosticism and the genre of war
literature. However, that may not always be such an easy or straightforward feat.

Acknowledging intent alone doesn’t necessarily account for the reigning epistemology that privileging a miniscule percentage of overall war experience (that of the combat soldier) creates in the genre as a whole. In Foucault’s estimation, the driving force that continues to “pin” the writing subject in a work of fiction is “the old bipolar field of discourse” and the accompanying “oeuvre” of the author—the Author Function—that critics use to continue the very discourse the author began (286, 283). Thus, it would seem, at least as far as war literature is concerned, our dominant “man-and-his-work criticism” will, for the foreseeable future, continue to push the war writer in front of his art (Foucault 283).

This is what makes Burke’s methodology such a wonderful tool to bring to war literature. His view of literature and poetry as symbolic action doesn’t necessarily posit that authorial intent or experience are irrelevant to a popular or critical consumption of war literature, but it properly compartmentalizes these elements alongside other, more formal elements of a text and the culture in which they are created and consumed. Or, as Burke describes his philosophy, it is for the “reader who wants a theory of the criticism of books (a theory that should be applicable, mutatis mutandis, to any specific cases)” (Philosophy xviii). War literature, then, when it is analyzed with Burke’s methodology in mind, often serves to remind us that, as Burke writes, the critic’s “question of the relationship between art and society” is a “momentous” one (“War” 235). This simple observation is also why Burke, throughout his writing life, argues for a balanced and
comprehensive approach to a work of literature, one that considers the text in its full context, a context that includes the author (in a manner similar to Foucault’s concept of the Author Function). Indeed, as William Rueckert writes in *Kenneth Burke and the Drama of Human Relations* (1963), “when Burke says that the main ideal of criticism is ‘to use all that is there to use’ he literally means what he says” (74). However, this does not mean that we should become mired in questions of accuracy and authority regarding objective experience, concepts that become rather slippery when the topic is war.

To be sure, Burke does regard a poet and his purpose as key “dramatistic” elements in a poet’s act of writing. His theory of dramatism places the poet (the “agent”), the poem (the “act”), and the poet’s “purpose” in a “pentad” with “agency” and “scene” (*Grammar* xv). But while Burke does say that “purpose” plays a “major role” in the exegesis of discovering “‘what is going on’ in poetry” (*Philosophy* 124), he also says that purpose is

by no means an exclusive role: it is merely one strong ingredient in the total recipe—and the critic must always be prepared to go beyond it, noting the ways in which it becomes interwoven with a much wider texture of motives. (*Philosophy* 92)

Experience, artifice, and criticism are far too complex, and the interrelatedness of the three is far too complementary to justify any valorization of any author’s biographical situatedness. This is why Burke’s dramatism is particularly apropos to contemporary war literature; it encourages a more dialectic or cooperative relationship between criticism and poetry:

[I]n studying the full nature of a symbolic act you are entitled, if the material is available, to disclose also the things that the act is doing for the
poet and no one else. Such private goads stimulate the artist, yet we may respond to imagery of guilt from totally different private goads of our own. We do not have to be drug addicts to respond to the guilt of a drug addict. The addiction is private, the guilt public. It is in such ways that the private and public areas of a symbolic act at once overlap and diverge. (*Philosophy* 25)

The role of the contemporary war literature critic, then, is to help make “the guilt public,” to show how the “symbolic act” of post-9/11 war literature “overlaps” with and “diverges” from the reader’s.

Vernon recognizes that the biographical fallacy that attends war literature is a seductive and dangerous one, and he points out that “to assume and posit uncritically that a work of fiction accurately depicts the author’s experiences of, or emotional response to, war and military is to make a rather gross interpretive error” (32). The key words in that sentence are “uncritically” and “accurately.” They, yet again, highlight the appropriateness of Burke’s methodology for war literature, for, as Rueckert writes, Burke did indeed consider a poem or a work of prose fiction as “symbolic autobiography” (*Kenneth* 68). “In the course of the creative process,” Rueckert posits, “there is a transfer, or transmutation” of the “poet’s being” into “symbolic form” (68). Yet, neither Burke nor Rueckert suggest that this means the critic should rest in this place, aesthetically or ethically. It would be an “interpretive error” for any critic of any work of literature to, as Burke says, “cling to a kind of naïve verbal realism that refuses to realize the full extent of the role played by symbolicity in his notions of reality” (*Language* 5). This is why Burke is the perfect counter to the ideology of combat gnosticism, for, as Burke writes, “Even if any given terminology is a *reflection* of reality, by its very nature as a
terminology, it must be a selection of reality; and to this extent must function also as a deflection of reality” (Language 45). It is up to the critic to trace how the dramatistic elements of a given situation interact in order to ascertain the underlying motive behind the symbolic act.

In “War, Response and Contradiction” (1933), Burke includes a long discussion of what he calls the “mechanistic metaphor” as it applies to trends in literary criticism that are dominant, even today, in the genre of war literature (242). Of the “put in/take out” “schema of stimulus and response” that is often used to “too literally” explain the way we perceive reality, Burke points out that, “returning to the issues of war,” one doesn’t “put in war-horrors and take out antimilitarism, put in ‘human’ pictures of war and take out war-spirit” (“War” 242). Burke doesn’t privilege “human” representations of war over “war-horrors,” but he does point out that the mechanistic approach to both versions of war damages both art and criticism:

There is a kind of “one to one” correspondence between stimulus and response which is assumed in much contemporary criticism, and I believe that it is not justified. Does antimilitarism produce antimilitarism, corruption corruption, quietude quietude, acceptance acceptance, individualism individualism, etc? I think that the entire issue must be broadened considerably. (“War” 244)

Burke’s words hold true for all genres and subjects of literature, but when we consider that the vast Babel of voices that still compete for a “right” to represent war in literature, and when we consider that a preference for a “naïve verbal realism” may always abide in

---

21 This essay first appeared in The Symposium in October of 1933. It was later republished in unexpurgated form in The Philosophy of Literary Form, to which all citations refer.
the ways that war literature is constructed and received, Burke’s observation carries a bit further.

As Burke writes, though the “tiny sliver of reality each of us has experienced firsthand” is undeniably “important” to a writer and his or her audience, overemphasizing such concerns often means that we forget that the “the whole overall ‘picture’ is but a construct of our symbol systems” (Language 5). Grasping the “whole overall picture” of any situation requires remarkable resourcefulness from a critic, and this may be one of the reasons why the critic of war literature relies so heavily on the biographical circumstances of the veteran-author when he or she seeks to weigh authorial purpose. As Burke says, if one were to “meditate on this fact until one sees its full implications,” it would feel much “like peering over the edge of things into an ultimate abyss” (Language 5). After all, Burke writes, “if you look for a man’s burden, you will find the principle that reveals the structure of his unburdening; or, in attenuated form, if you look for his problem, you will find the lead that explains the structure of his solution” (Philosophy 92). When the writer is a veteran, the burden sometimes overshadows the structure of his unburdening.

In a 2013 essay for The New York Times “At War” blog, Brian Van Reet displays a dire need for a method like Burke’s. In his essay, “A Problematic Genre, the ‘Kill Memoir,” Van Reet notes that there is a major problem with the glut of combat memoirs that had been flooding the publishing market in recent years. Specifically, Van Reet argues that these works do little to expand our understanding of war and its effects on
humanity. Van Reet calls these books “kill memoirs,” witness-based stories of violence and self-congratulation that trade on combat resumes, high body counts, and the appeal of “real-seeming” tales based on experiential accuracy (n. pag.). These “kill memoirs,” he rightly notes, follow a two-part formula: “First,” they make a “claim to authenticity (autobiography, memoir, firsthand). And second, [kill memoirs] assure the reader the he will learn the intimate details of taking human life” (n. pag.). Van Reet is, in some respects, doing what Vernon encourages above. After noting the authorial intention of such narratives, he goes on to suggest that these “kill memoirs” unfortunately reinforce the military-civilian divide. He writes, “Rather than complicate the question (did you kill anyone during war?) or subvert it or implicate the American public as a party to what was done in its name, these books simply answer in the most spectacularly affirmative way possible” (n. pag.). Van Reet is right, of course. Such works probably do confirm the worst stereotypes of the typical American military member. The problem, though, is that his response is driven by a morally indignant attitude that can be easily dismissed or ignored; indeed, some civilians and military members may not consider the stereotypes negative at all.

The memoirs Van Reet is concerned with perpetuate the cycle of what Roy Scranton, in the Los Angeles Review of Books, recently termed “the myth of the trauma hero,” a master narrative in the war literature genre that “frames and filters our perceptions of reality through a set of recognizable and comforting conventions” (n. pag.). This is essentially what Van Reet notices and bemoans in these memoirs, and I
agree with almost everything he has to say about popular war literature and its questionable ethics. I also join him as he directs praise toward the recent war fiction about Iraq that, as of the writing of his essay, was just beginning to appear in increasing numbers. As Van Reet suggests, contemporary war fiction is a more ethically responsible vehicle by which a veteran-writer can draw upon experience and “create something greater and truer than the sum of its parts” (n. pag.). I further agree that the works Van Reet attacks are problematically opportunistic, boastful, sensational, and—in some cases—full of fabrications (see fig. 2). 22 As Van Reet suggests, the most popular contemporary “kill memoirs” often celebrate what should remain uncelebrated. For all of these reasons, Van Reet is right to alert, as he does, to the way many veterans write about war. However, once Van Reet makes his point about the appropriate way that aesthetics and ethics should affect war literature (an argument he makes quite well), he misses the chance to step out of the cloud of combat gnosticism and closes with an empty plea: “Those of us veterans who are writing about these wars,” he writes, “can do better than that. And the publishers should, too” (n. pag.).

This is what happens when combat gnosticism determines what works reach the reading public. What Van Reet’s analysis needs is a method by which he can examine

22 Van Reet’s essay briefly discusses Dillard Johnson’s false claim in his non-fiction narrative— *Carnivore: A Memoir by One of the Deadliest American Soldiers of All Time (2013)*—that he killed more than 2,600 enemy combatants in Iraq (see fig. 2). Were that true, as Dan Murphy points out in an essay for *The Christian Science Monitor*, Johnson would have accounted for 14% of all enemy deaths between 2003 and 2007, “an astonishing number for a single soldier who did not serve in the hottest battles of the post-invasion war” (n. pag.).
these crude tales rhetorically, to reveal the human motives within and without the books.

What he needs is a methodology like Burke’s: one that treats all literature and symbolic constructions of unreliable reality as propaganda and art. I’m not arguing that the popularity of the “kill memoir” is a necessarily a “good” thing, generically speaking, nor am I suggesting that Van Reet is wrong to object to the prideful boastings of the memoirs he criticizes. The problem is that his analysis never quite escapes the constricting trends of the genre, trends that lend excessive epistemological authority to authors merely because they were the ones pulling the triggers. Van Reet makes the dubious assertion that war literature’s sole value is to be an “arbiter of truth,” but for him, that “truth” is still exclusively rooted in the experience of combat. Thus, he somewhat misses the opportunity—through his overriding indignant motive—to analyze the symbolic elements that these “kill memoirs” use to create tales that lack a bare minimum level of humility or a proper quota of guilt.

![Front flap of the dust jacket to Carnivore: A Memoir by One of the Deadliest American Soldiers of All Time (2013), published by William Morrow. Courtesy author’s collection.](image)

**Fig. 2.** Front flap of the dust jacket to *Carnivore: A Memoir by One of the Deadliest American Soldiers of All Time* (2013), published by William Morrow. Courtesy author’s collection.
I point out the compounding issues behind Van Reet’s essay not to necessarily dispute his conclusions but to highlight Burke’s reminder that, “to an extent, books merely exploit our attitudes—and to an extent they may form our attitudes. The difference between exploitation and formation may be illustrated by war literature” (“War” 235). Van Reet and other critics like him come to war literature with attitudes pre-formed by combat gnosticism, and they are rightly offended when war writers exploit those attitudes. A plea for ethical war writing from veterans is, to be sure, a worthy pursuit, but as long as combat gnosticism remains, there may always be a popular desire for the triumphant combat memoir that, of course, form our attitudes about war literature. What the genre needs is a method that rescues the contemporary war story from the generic impulse to delineate war literature according to poetic, scientific, or rhetorical ends, which, Burke says, are not mutually exclusive; rather, they all overlap and blend through “the substance of the literary act” (*Philosophy* viii). Or, as Burke writes, “whereas poetic language is a kind of symbolic action, for itself and in itself, and whereas scientific action is a preparation for action, rhetorical language is inducement to action (or to attitude, attitude being an incipient act)” (*Rhetoric* 42). By examining all of this language, together, as “symbolic action,” Burke says, we can reveal “the fact that invective is an intrinsic resource of language,” and we can simultaneously avoid the “genetic fallacy” (“Dramatism” 328).

As Burke writes in his 1966 essay that defines “Dramatism,” all language is essentially a system of symbolic substitution that follows a simple series of if/then
statements: “If action, then drama; if drama, then conflict; if conflict, then victimage” (“Dramatism” 342). Therefore:

A dramatistic view of human motives thus culminates in the ironic admonition that perversions of the sacrificial principle (purgation by scapegoat, [congregations by segregation]) are the constant temptation of human societies, whose orders are built by a kind of animal exceptionally adept in the ways of symbolic action (343).²³

This brings me back to the issue regarding the brute reality of war and the role that art plays in the intricate interconnectedness of war’s reality and the aesthetic/propagandistic values that a work uses (or misuses) to complete its rhetorical goals. As Burke’s work reminds, art is a learning tool but not inherently so. It takes a method to track the symbolic action in a given work and reveal how a symbol (or a racist proverb, or the appropriation of “Geronimo,” or a boastful “Kill Memoir”) can “by its function as name and definition, give simplicity and order to an otherwise unclarified complexity” (Counter-Statement 154).

In “War, Response, and Contradiction” (1933), Burke essentially shows us how one might negotiate opposing attitudes regarding the way war is represented in art. This essay is, ostensibly, a response to two separate book reviews, short analyses that were published earlier in 1933, side by side, in an issue of The New Republic. In these paired columns, Archibald MacLeish and Malcolm Cowley respond to a collection of World

²³ Burke’s “Dramatism” essay was first published in Communication: Concepts and Perspectives (1966), and then he revised it and republished it two years later for the International Encyclopedia of the Social Sciences (1968). In the version that appeared in the Encyclopedia, Burke added “congregation by segregation” to his parenthetical clarification of “perversions of the sacrificial principle” (451).
War I photos—*The First World War* (1933)—edited by Laurence Stallings. Each critic takes an entirely different approach to Stallings’ collection, and Burke steps in to, above all, point out that critics of literature and other forms of art (but most obviously critics of war literature) often fall prey to the “assumption that people are quite as direct as machines in their responses” to representations of war (“War” 241). Thus, Burke’s essay stands as a useful model for the contemporary critic of war literature who may object, on aesthetic or ethical grounds, to the way war is represented in art. Since Burke considered war a massive symptom of the failure of verbal debate in popular and political culture, his essay serves the critic today, as a criticism of criticism. He gives us a perspective on a perspective. Before discussion of the opposing positions of MacLeish and Cowley, in what Burke calls the “battle of the books,” he writes:

Aesthetical values are intermingled with ethical values—and the ethical is the basis of the practical. Or, put more simply: our ideas of the beautiful, the curious, the interesting, the unpleasant, the boring are closely bound with our ideas of the good, the desirable and undesirable have much to do with our attitudes towards our everyday activities. (“War” 234)

With this guiding thesis, Burke assumes a particularly reasonable stance regarding the debate over the type of photos Stallings included in his collection, and he manages to remain equally charitable to both men (though Burke was good friends with Cowley).

MacLeish is upset that Stallings’ book of World War I photos is not comprehensive enough, that it ignores that the war was wholly a picture of “parades, speeches, brass bands, bistros, boredom, terror, anguish, heroism, endurance, humor, death” (159). And, above all, MacLeish says, portraying the “truth” of the war means portraying the fact that it was “a human war” whose “adversaries were men” and whose
“stories were stories of men” (159). Or, as Burke summarizes MacLeish’s position, MacLeish objects to the idea that Stallings’ collection only “pictures the repellant side of war” (“War” 236). Such a collection, MacLeish argues, is not art at all; rather, it is utter propaganda that operates as “one of the most anti-war tracts every produced” (160). He firmly believes that art about war should record “those things, seen or unseen, which have actually occurred . . . regardless the effect upon the minds of the young or the minds of the old” (160).

On the other side of the debate stands Malcolm Cowley, whose piece is more of a response to MacLeish than it is to Stallings. He doesn’t as much take issue with Stallings’ selectivity as he does with MacLeish’s impassioned anti-propagandistic argument about what art should and should not do. Cowley writes:

what [MacLeish] says in effect is that other artists, out of hatred for propaganda, ought to do their best to bring about that very disaster which they and he most want to prevent. This is either nonsense, or else it is mysticism too deep for most of us to understand. (161)

Though Burke admits that there is some “talking at cross-purposes” in the two essays, he says that the argument is a “vital” one because both men are essentially agreeing with the central tenet of Burke’s methodology, that art is “designed to elicit a ‘response’ of some sort” (“War” 235, 236). Thus, Burke emphatically reminds us that, despite the intent of the artist, all art is propaganda, or, at a minimum, all art is “by its very nature an abstractive process, a simplification” that “has an interpretive or ‘philosophic’ consistency which events in actuality do not have” (“War” 237). As Burke writes, “MacLeish seems mainly concerned with the poet’s response to experience, and Cowley
with the public’s response to the poet” (“War” 235). Van Reet, for his part, makes both arguments in his essay as well; he is concerned with contemporary war memoirists’ responses to experience and with the public’s positive response to those “poets.” Burke shows how limiting such an argument can be.

As Burke negotiates the MacLeish-Cowley debate, he shows in glaring detail how both scholars’ rhetoric is ultimately distracted by the reality the photos symbolically represent. This is the same mistake Van Reet makes. Of MacLeish, Burke asks, “Where indeed can MacLeish point to the authority of the events ‘as they actually occurred,’ when the occurrence is still confined to the poet’s symbols themselves?” (“War” 237).

And then he goes on to respond to MacLeish’s appeal for objective “truth” in war photography with a wonderful metaphor regarding the Rosetta Stone, which, he reminds us, “was carved for the purpose of conveying certain information local to the times” (“War” 237). So, too, are the memoirs that make up Van Reet’s “kill memoir” genre. Yet, just as the Rosetta Stone “became important to (modern linguists) as a key for deciphering Egyptian,” the value of a war memoir or a collection of photos as documented “truth” pales as far as the work’s rhetorical “purpose” or “motive” is concerned later (“War” 237). Like the stone, we “use” a war memoir “for our purposes, for a ‘truth’ which did not exist at the time of its erection” (“War” 237). And so, for that reason, “we owe the stone no allegiance” (“War” 237).

“Are not wars what we make of them?” Burke asks, “Why must we attempt to uphold, by strange canons of ‘truth,’ the ‘1916 character’ of war?” (“War” 238). We
could ask the same question of combat gnosticism and any suggestion that war literature should accurately illuminate the so-called human cost of war or provide a vicarious experience of war. One might echo Burke and ask, “Why must we attempt to uphold, by strange canons of ‘combat-based-truth,’ the ‘post-9/11 character’ of war?”

In what is probably Burke’s most famous essay—a review of Hitler’s Mein Kampf first published in the Southern Review in 1939—Burke practices what he preaches. That is, in “The Rhetoric of Hitler’s ‘Battle,’” Burke considered it his “job,” as a critic, to “find all available ways of making the Hitlerite distortions of religion apparent, in order that politicians of his kind in America be unable to perform a similar swindle” (21). The lasting applicability and power of his analysis, thus, relies on the fact that Burke doesn’t merely outline Hitler’s use of an extensive scapegoat mechanism. He doesn’t merely respond to a “poet.” Instead, he shows us how susceptible all people are to rhetoric, rhetoric that is especially effective when a nation is full of the resentment that follows national trauma, be the source of that trauma “losing” World War I or suffering the tragedy of 9/11. Seventy-seven years ago, Burke described Mein Kampf as “the well of Nazi magic; crude magic, but effective,” and he points out that “A people trained in pragmatism should want to inspect this magic” (2). Today, considering that unrest, conquest, imperialism, terrorism, murder, and war continue to spread and morph across the globe through “magical” systems of hierarchy and scapegoating, it is rather urgent for

24 The essay was also republished in unexpurgated form in The Philosophy of Literary Form. All citations refer to the original Southern Review version.
us to continue Burke’s project, to inspect other “wells,” other “fonts” of similarly “crude magic.”

Burke not only discusses the way language can be “used” by a “poet” like Hitler, but he also shows the literary critic how, through rhetorical analysis, he or she can remove some of the power of such language. First, Hitler essentialized the “international Jew” as the “international devil” according to “two keystones” of “opposite equations” that highlighted “Aryan ‘heroism’ and ‘sacrifice’” as opposed to “Jewish ‘cunning’ and ‘arrogance’” (13). Whereas the Aryan pursued “self-preservation” based upon “the sacrifice of the individual to the group, hence, militarism, army discipline, and one big company union” the threatening Jew sought “self-preservation” based on “individualism” which “attain[ed] its cunning ends by the exploitation of peace” (14). Since any number of “bad features” can be loaded up onto the symbolic “devil” or “scapegoat,” war and murder and destruction follow close behind (4). And, with the help of a “sinister secularized revision of Christian theology,” Hitler seamlessly put a “sense of dignity upon a fighting basis,” one “requiring the conquest of ‘inferior races’” (9). While Burke shows us the “exasperating, even nauseating” ways that Hitler managed to goad an entire country into ritually purging an entire race through murder and genocide, his essay is eerily predictive of America’s post-9/11 warlike responses to the Muslim world (1).

Burke shows us the intricate, yet frighteningly simple, steps that Hitler’s scapegoat mechanism involved. First, out of the symbolic fog of words, Hitler deliberately crafted a “unification device” that featured the establishment of an “inborn
dignity” within his “Aryan” race (9). Next, he followed with a “projection device,” one that enacted the need for a cleanse, or a “curative process” that included “hand[ing] over one’s ills to a scapegoat, thereby getting purification by dissociation” (9). The purging of the scapegoat, then, results in a “symbolic rebirth” for any who may choose to subscribe to the tenets of the unification device (9). “The projective device of the scapegoat,” Burke writes, “coupled with the Hitlerite doctrine of inborn racial superiority, provides its followers with a ‘positive’ view of life. They can again get the feel of moving forward, towards a goal” (9). In the contemporary war narrative—fictive or non-fictive—it is quite easy to trace the same thing, to see what Burke saw in Hitler’s book:

[I]f one can hand over his infirmities to a vessel, or “cause,” outside the self, one can battle an external enemy instead of battling the enemy within. And the greater one’s internal inadequacies, the greater the amount of evils one can load up on the back of “the enemy.” (9)

With Burke as our guide, the literary critic can observe, assess, and construct a guard against (if necessary) similar mechanisms in the medicine of the contemporary war “poet.”

Burke’s methodology, as the rest of this dissertation will show, allows the critic of war literature to “lie on the bias across the categories of modern specialization” (“Literature” 303). It also “automatically breaks down the barriers erected about literature as a specialized pursuit” (“Literature” 303). In other words, it breaks down the barriers of combat gnosticism. As Elizabeth Weiser writes in “Burke and War,” “Dramatism encourages a poetic dialectic—the celebrations of differing perspectives—and transcendence—the search for points of merger—in an effective parliamentary debate”
Thus, this dissertation considers all works of war literature as “strategies for selecting enemies and allies, for socializing losses, for warding off evil eye, for purification, propitiation, and desanctification, consolation and vengeance, admonition and exhortation, implicit commands or instructions of one sort or another” ("Literature" 304). Or, as Burke argues in *Attitudes Toward History*, dramatism can work on all “materials of social relationships,” resulting in the “maximum opportunity for the resources of criticism” (173).

Burke passed away in 1993, and the bulk of his rhetoric was aimed at World War II and the Cold War, but his philosophy resonated throughout his life and continues to do so today. This is, yet again, what makes Kenneth Burke and his methodology such an important tool to bring to war literature. This is also why I find it baffling that none of the scholars cited in this dissertation, save one, ever mention Burke or his rhetorical approach to literature. In his 2009 *PMLA* essay, Fredric Jameson points out that there are often formal elements in “representations of war that are content to confirm the stereotype” of traditional literary aesthetics:

Indeed one often has the feeling that all war novels (and war films) are pretty much the same and have few enough surprises for us, even though their situations may vary. In practice, we can enumerate some seven or eight situations, which more or less exhaust the genre. (1533)

Jameson goes on to conclude that, because war writers often recycle tired and repetitive tropes and plot forms, the genre is rather limited by the popular “suspicion that war is ultimately unrepresentable” (1533). I covered this issue in the previous chapter, but I bring Jameson up again because he is one of the only scholars of war literature who
suggests that Kenneth Burke’s methodology can offer the critic a useful guide by which he or she can parse any work of war literature—despite the limiting issues of repetitive “situations” or the aphorism that “You Had to Be There” to write about war (Ryan 17). With Burke, one can analyze war literature with full awareness of the ideology of combat gnosticism and the persistence of a “naïve verbal realism” in popular expectations regarding war and artifice.25

Jameson writes, “What may prove most helpful here, then, is Kenneth Burke’s ‘dramatistic pentad,’ which differentiates between act, agent, agency, purpose, and scene as so many distinct media through which the narrative material can be focused” (1533). Jameson continues:

[Narrative semiotics, by identifying Burke’s first three categories with one another—an act always somehow implying an agent and the agent in turn implying an agency—suggests a differing ordering of these perspectives, in which purpose somehow withdraws (as a feature of interpretation rather than of representation). (1534)]

My intention to apply Burke’s ideas to contemporary war literature did not begin with Jameson and his article, but his point that “there is no correct or true photographically accurate rendering of such multidimensional realities” during war describes what I consider the basis of my overall thesis in this dissertation (1534). Burke’s methodology can help us transcend the difficulties of war and its representation in literature so that we

25 To be fair, Roy Scranton also mentions Burke’s scapegoat principle and “combat gnosticism” in an essay that appeared in the Los Angeles Review of Books, though he doesn’t specifically reference Burke or dramatism by name. In an email exchange, he did indicate to me that Burke, Burke’s methodology of dramatism, and his scapegoating mechanism would likely inform a chapter of his forthcoming dissertation.
can arrive at critical analyses that avoid the moral indignation of Van Reet or the misleading assumptions and aesthetics of combat gnosticators.

So, let’s return to that day in 2005 in Saudi Arabia when that young Marine told me to “watch out” so “I don’t get scalped by no Injuns,” the story that I mentioned in the introduction. Kenneth Burke would likely respond by pointing out that that young man was responding to a recurring situation type (Americans at war) by simulating reality through proverb (“don’t get scalped by Injuns”) because he lacked any other way to express his own socio-historic situatedness. As Burke writes in “Literature as Equipment for Living” (1938), “Proverbs are designed for consolation or vengeance, for admonition or exhortation, for foretelling” (593). Yes, the racist proverb I heard in Saudi Arabia reflects a common American attitude that has proven disastrous for large swaths of cultures, nations, and peoples across decades of war and violent conflict, and it continues to have disastrous effects today, not only on Native Americans and their cultures, but also on “enemy” populations anywhere the United States exerts itself militarily. So I am right to alert to the use and misuse of Native American stereotypes and symbols in contemporary war discourse. Burke would likely add that the critic has an important role to play in such linguistic situations; for, as he argues, language is best conceived as “stylistic medicine,” and “the poet is, indeed, a medicine man” (Philosophy 61, 64).

As we can see, even Burke is not immune to symbol mongering; even his rhetoric is sprinkled with the recycled symbols and attitudes that grow out of America’s collective conception of native cultures, a conception that grew out of one of America’s most
effective and lasting scapegoating mechanisms (“medicine man”). When certain social phenomena recur with frequency, proverbs and symbols become very clear linguistic expressions of man’s (the symbol-using animal’s) “medicine.” Burke was quite aware of the implications of his metaphor, however, for he had a strong affinity for proverbs, and he used them, as I do, to show how people have little recourse when they “find a certain social relationship recurring so frequently that they must ‘have a word for it’” (“Literature” 293). It is on this “social relationship” that I focus my analysis. The need to “have a word” or a phrase to describe a wartime experience is obvious in contemporary war literature, a body of literature that—for the last fourteen years—has mainly been left to the combat soldier. Burke asks: “Could the most complex and sophisticated works of art legitimately be considered somewhat as ‘proverbs writ large’?” (“Literature” 296). The same question can apply to any “real” representation of war just as easily as it can apply to the most sophisticated work of literature.

Therefore, it is worth returning, one last time, to the rather astonishing fact that few scholars of war literature ever mention Kenneth Burke in their work. This is remarkable to me because, though Burke didn’t limit his approach to war literature, analyzing war literature according to his scapegoat mechanism essentially does the very thing Margot Norris, Kate McLoughlin, and other leading scholars of war literature seek to do in their work. Thus, the separate chapters of this dissertation heed C. Allen Carter’s admonition, in Kenneth Burke and the Scapegoat Process (1996), that the responsibility of disentangling the scapegoat mechanism falls on the critic:
The problem is that when we scapegoat those unaware of the ubiquity of scapegoating, we scapegoat nonetheless; when we use a rhetoric of opposition, we rhetorically set the stage for new oppositions; and when we try to plot a better world, we entangle ourselves in new plots. From the zone of these tensions we can never escape, but through systematic criticism of narrative we can limit ourselves to relatively benign forms of victimage. (53)

Or, as Burke says, by tracing the scapegoat mechanism in contemporary war fiction, we can “help some of the rawness to abate, by including a much wider range of man’s symbolic prowess under the heading of the fearsomely appreciated, and thereby providing less incentives to be overprompt at feeling exacted with moral indignation” (“Linguistic” 301).

Burke writes in *A Grammar of Motives*,

[T]here thus comes a point where, lacking the protections of a method, one must go no farther. Nor is there any good reason why one should, since the methods of linguistic skepticism have been developed far enough to ground the principles of wonder, resignation, tolerance, and sympathy which are necessary for sound human relations—and what we now most need is to perfect and simplify the ways of admonition, so that men may cease to persecute one another under the promptings of demonic ambition that arrive in turn from distortions and misconceptions of purpose. (305)

As Samuel Haynes reminds us, “War is not an occasional interruption of a normality called peace; it is a climate in which we live” (xii). Burke would agree with that assessment, but instead of normalizing war through unquestioned symbol systems of sacrifice, pity, and hero worship, his critical method—and the critical method of this dissertation—seeks to undercut the “tyrannous ubiquity” of “strife, enmity, factions, as a characteristic motive of rhetorical expression” in contemporary war literature (*Rhetoric* 20). Thus, my approach to contemporary war literature remains culturally rooted, but it
also correctly repositions combatants and noncombatants as somewhat equal agents in the discourse of war, a discourse that insists on creating scapegoats. Art may never be as powerful as we want it to be, and the same is true of art’s criticism. Still, I join Burke in his hope that criticism such as mine can bridge the gap between war experience and the discourse that it creates so that humans, everywhere, may “cease to persecute one another.”
Chapter Three: Confounding Expectations and Chasing the Scapegoat in Kevin Powers’ *The Yellow Birds*

War may be treated as an agency, insofar as it is a means to an end; as a collective act, subdivisible into many individual acts; as a purpose, in schemes proclaiming a cult of war. (Kenneth Burke, *Counter-Statement* 144)

One of the first critically acclaimed works of contemporary war fiction to emerge from the United States’ invasion and occupation of Iraq is Kevin Powers’ novel *The Yellow Birds* (2012). The novel was met with dozens of positive reviews, and it has rightly garnered an impressive list of major awards, including being named a finalist for the 2012 National Book Award for fiction.\(^{26}\) The work is a fictive tale of one soldier—Army Private John Bartle—and his struggle with guilt before, during, and after his combat experience in Iraq. The novel stands out starkly from other types of literature that have emerged from our wars since 9/11. It isn’t necessarily a unique work as far as a narrative arc is concerned, but it is remarkable since it fully examines the ways that the

\(^{26}\) Alongside Ben Fountain’s *Billy Lynn’s Long Halftime Walk* (2012), Powers lost out to Louise Erdrich for her novel *The Round House* (2012). Some of the other notable awards that Powers and *The Yellow Birds* won include the French Prix littéraire du Monde, the 2013 PEN/Hemingway Award for first fiction, the Guardian First Book Award, co-recipient of the 78th Anisfield-Wolf Book Award for Fiction, and the Sue Kaufman Prize for first fiction from the American Academy of Arts and Letters.
ghosts of war and memory can be reconstructed in language. With a disjointed style, a meticulously controlled form, and a tone dripping with guilt, Powers delivers a work of artifice that places unique demands on a reader, a reader most likely accustomed to mere chronicles of war experience. As such, the novel is especially ambitious and necessary.

Much of the novel’s emotional tenor is captured in the thought process of this young veteran named Bartle who uses long passages of self-reflection to process and examine his past war experience. Here is his line of thinking as he walks through an airport upon his return home:

> The ghosts of the dead filled the empty seats of every gate I passed: boys destroyed by mortars and rockets and bullets and IEDs to the point that when we tried to get them to a medevac, the skin slid off, or limbs barely held in place detached, and I thought that they were young and had girls at home or some dream that they thought would make their lives important. They had been wrong of course. You don’t dream when you’re dead. I dream. The living dream, though I won’t say thanks for that. (104)

As this passage indicates, Powers’ war novel contends with the side effects of experience and death and the ways memory can haunt and implicate those survivors (the hero and the reader) who try to remember the unpleasant particularities of war. Doug Stanton discusses war literature in a review of the novel for *The Daily Beast*: “We don’t need anymore ‘information,’ ‘facts,’ ‘reality,’” he writes, “We need story, and fewer pixels. We need crisp canvas, a brush” (n. pag.). *The Yellow Birds* is that story, that “living dream,” or better yet, it is one man’s living nightmare about war, a nightmare the reader shares and Powers challenges us to examine further.

The novel tracks the disintegration of three soldiers—John Bartle (our protagonist and narrator), a scarred sergeant named Sterling, and an unblemished idealist named
Daniel “Murph” Murphy. It begins conventionally enough, with a dust covered Iraqi war scene full of dirt, blood, profanity, bullets, and a dead man, but we quickly learn that none of this is what causes Bartle’s nightmare, and this becomes our mission for the rest of the novel; we must track down the full mechanism of his burdening and unburdening. Thus, early on, Powers establishes three things, all of which become extremely important for the structure and form of the novel as a whole. We learn through the opening narration that Bartle and Murph are closely bound together, that Bartle hates Sterling, and that Murph is going to die. As Bartle announces, “I didn’t die. Murph did” (14). Bartle narrates all of this in the opening chapter, but he does not relate the circumstances of Murph’s actual death until the novel’s end, and this is one of the many formal elements that keep us reading.

Eerily reminiscent of Bowe Bergdahl’s capture in Afghanistan in 2009, 27 this young man nicknamed “Murph” submits to the stress of war and walks into an enemy-controlled village in Iraq, unarmed and undressed (which is, essentially, an act of suicide). He is killed, and his body is mutilated and thrown from the top of a mosque’s minaret. When Bartle and Sterling find Murph’s tangled body, they decide that they have no choice but to “fix this like it never happened” (208). So, in an attempt to both cover-up the circumstances regarding Murph’s death and perhaps to exact a certain amount of revenge, Sergeant Sterling shoots an innocent Iraqi man in the face (after the man helps

27 Bowe Bergdahl, a soldier deployed to Afghanistan with the U.S. Army, walked away from his post and was subsequently captured by the Taliban. He was a prisoner of war from June 2009 until his highly publicized release in May 2014 (Obama).
them move Murph’s body) and burns the minaret—and, presumably, the attached mosque—to the ground. Sterling and Bartle then float both corpses down the Tigris River. Bartle and Sterling manage to survive Iraq, but they barely survive war. The novel, then, has less to do with Daniel Murphy’s death than it does with the consequences of survival in a social order that allows war to exist, consequences that leave the reader unsure whether or not such a fate is the preferred one.

Bartle closes the opening chapter with a simple statement: “We had lived, Murph and me” (24). This setup tempts us to turn the page: we want to know how Murph dies and how Bartle survives, but we also need to discover the nature of their friendship, how they “lived.” This is what keeps us invested as the narrative jumps around temporally. It begins with a battle scene in Iraq, but then it moves to a training exercise and a predeployment picnic in New Jersey, two flashbacks that firmly establish the conflict to be examined in this war novel: a common trope of the American war story that I call the “war promise.” Bartle makes his war promise twice, and this promise becomes both the foundation of his friendship with Murph and the central conflict of the novel. First, Sterling tells Murph, “I want you to get in Bartle’s back pocket and I want you to stay there,” and Bartle accepts the burden with a quick “Roger, Sergeant” (33, 34). Later, Bartle has a similar exchange with Murph’s mother Ladonna, a well-meaning lady who begs Bartle to bring Murph home alive. Again, Bartle reflexively agrees, “I promise. I promise I’ll bring him home to you” (47). Immediately after this, the suffering begins, and people begin dying. Thus, the “war promise” becomes Bartle’s hamartia, and as
Bartle and Murph fight to maintain contact with their own humanity in the responsibility-free warzone of Iraq, the rest of the narrative becomes an extended reckoning of culpability, guilt, and punishment.

The “war promise” is a fairly common trope in American war stories, and it serves Powers well. In *Saving Private Ryan* (1998), Tom Hanks’ character (Captain Miller) promises to bring Matt Damon’s character (Private Ryan) back home safely, and Miller’s successful completion of his war promise (and his death) allows the movie to end with a cathartic, redemptive conclusion. Leslie Marmon Silko’s *Ceremony* (1977) uses the war promise in an entirely different manner, as Tayo’s failed promise to bring Rocky “home safe” from World War II allows Silko a way to explore the interconnectedness of individual experience, responsibility, and the spiritual health of an entire culture (73). Indeed, when Tayo makes his war promise to his grandmother, Tayo notes that such a pledge carries with it massive, yet inscrutable, implications. As Tayo notes, “he could see that she was waiting for something to happen; but he knew that she always hoped, that she always expected it to happen to him, not to Rocky” (73).

In *The Yellow Birds*, the war promise allows Powers a way to chronicle the manifestation of guilt in three vastly different soldiers as each one flows to, through, and from the war in Iraq. Among other things, this war promise asks us to regard, in close detail, the nature of the social contract that got these soldiers to Iraq in the first place, to make what the protagonist of Tim O’Brien’s *Going After Cacciato* (1978) calls “acts of consent” (319). In a long passage that appears toward the end of O’Brien’s novel, Paul
Berlin identifies the way that war is made possible through a complicated blending and bending of social obligations and promise making:

I don’t pretend to be expert on matters of obligation, either moral or contractual, but I do know when I feel obliged. Obligation is more than a claim imposed on us; it is a personal sense of indebtedness. It is a feeling, an acknowledgement, that through many prior acts of consent we have agreed to perform certain future acts. I have that feeling. I make that acknowledgement. By my prior acts—acts of consent—I have bound myself to performing subsequent acts. I put on a uniform. I boarded a plane. I accepted a promotion and the responsibilities that went with it. I joined in the pursuit of Cacciato. I marched. I voted once to continue the pursuit. I persisted. I urged the others to persist. I tied myself to this mission, promising to see it to its end. These were explicit consents. But beyond them were many tacit promises: to my family, my friends, my town, my country, my fellow soldiers. These promises, too, accumulated. I was not misled. I was not gulled. On the contrary, I believe . . . I feel . . . that I am being asked to perform a final service that is entirely compatible with what I had promised earlier. A debt, a legitimate debt, is being called in. (319)

Like O’Brien’s novel, The Yellow Birds examines these issues and the various conflicts that arise around “obligations” and “acts consent” when a soldier volunteers for war and recognizes, too late, the indebtedness he or she owes afterwards. That is, the war promise in The Yellow Birds asks us to make a full, dialectic reckoning of war’s cost so that no one character or reader escapes implication when the “legitimate debt” of the Iraq war is called in. Bartle’s survival becomes our own survival but so, too, does his guilt.

The reader has to piece together many of the hinted at promises, secrets, and crimes of the three protagonists slowly. As Bartle concludes toward the middle of the novel, recollecting traumatic experience is “like putting a puzzle together from behind: the shapes familiar, the picture quickly fading, the muted tan of the cardboard backing a tease at wholeness and completion” (139). Disjointed temporally, the narrative jumps
from Iraq to New Jersey to Germany to Virginia and then to a military prison, and so the reader becomes an active participant in Bartle’s attempt to fit the puzzle back together again. To do so, we need answers for many questions. Why is such an innocuous promise such a transgression? How does Murph die and why does his ultimate sacrifice cause Bartle such guilt? Why is Bartle in prison? Why does Bartle hate Sterling? Because we need to know, we keep reading, and since we are included in piecing together the unknown facts of Murph’s death and Bartle’s part in it, we share the protagonist’s examination of his own culpability and his quiet desire for redemption. We become party to war’s guilt and that guilt’s imperfect redemption, and we find that that effort, the attempt “to piece the war into a pattern,” is a probably a fool’s errand (216).

*Kevin Powers’ Philosophy of Form: Packaging the American War Novel*

Powers was a machine gunner in the U.S. Army, served two tours in Iraq, and then, after leaving the military, completed an undergraduate degree at Virginia Commonwealth University and then an MFA at the University of Texas at Austin where he was a Michener Fellow in Poetry. Indeed, the novel benefits from its author’s training as both a soldier and a poet, though neither experience ever manages to fully hijack the narrative or its style. As Elizabeth Samet summarizes in a review for *The New Republic*, Powers’ “military experience clearly taught him many things, yet his book feels less like a thinly veiled autobiographical fiction than like a fully realized work of the imagination” (“War Lies”). Much of Powers’ career as a soldier and a writer deserves comment and
praise; however, the most remarkable thing about Powers is this fact, that instead of first publishing a war memoir or autobiography, he chose to first craft a fictive treatment, not of his own experience, but of, as he describes it, “the cartography of one man’s consciousness” (“Author’s Note” 156).

This is a fairly vague description of the novel, but Samet’s observation that Powers’ novel is no “thinly veiled autobiographical fiction” is an astute one, and this is ultimately what allows Powers to transcend the limits of his own experience. Powers isn’t the first veteran-author to turn to war fiction first, but most of his famous fiction-writing predecessors penned tales at least loosely based on their own experiences. After leaving his short stint as a pilot-in-training with the Royal Canadian Air Force, William Faulkner’s first novel was Soldier’s Pay (1926), a novel that closely parallels his own career as a pilot that was cut short by the armistice. Following his six days of work with the Red Cross’s canteen service and his subsequent wounding, Ernest Hemingway used both experiences to create the characters of Nick Adams (In Our Time), Jack Barnes (The Sun Also Rises), and Frederic Henry (A Farewell to Arms). Other veteran-writers who have risen to the top of the canon of war literature went straight to the combat memoir. Tim O’Brien penned a memoir first with If I Die in A Combat Zone, Box Me Up and Ship Me Home (1973) as did Philip Caputo with A Rumor of War (1977). Celebrated Iraq war poet Brian Turner still hasn’t written a fictive war novel, publishing instead two collections of poetry and a memoir first. Many Iraq war memoirs and blogs-turned-into-books appeared before The Yellow Birds, but Powers is most likely the first Iraq war
veteran to successfully create a work of war fiction devoid of obvious elements of autobiography.

Fig. 3: Cover art and back jacket of the first edition of *The Yellow Birds*. Courtesy author’s collection.

As such, then, it is illuminating to examine this novel’s packaging, that extra push it needs to establish its rightful and “authentic” place among the other subgenres of war writing that appeared first. On the cover of the first edition (see fig. 3), three exclamatory blurbs from Colm Toibin and Ann Patchett (endorsements from established, award winning fiction writers) and Anthony Swofford (the endorsement of the successful veteran-author) are primarily concerned with situating the novel as literary, or as a more
artistically serious work of fiction. These authors describe Powers’ novel as “Compelling” and “Inexplicably beautiful” and “Powerful.” Perhaps because the cover art displays two small soldiers with guns, in silhouette, transposed over a setting sun, there is only one generic reference to war or war literature. Right below Powers’ byline, Tom Wolfe calls The Yellow Birds “The All Quiet on the Western Front of America’s Arab wars.”

The back jacket and Powers’ website, however, overtly control the reader’s expectations with longer blurbs from other established writers and critics, ranging from Philip Caputo to Robert Olen Butler (both veteran-authors of Vietnam and Vietnam war fiction). Caputo, the author of the Vietnam War novel Indian Country (1987), writes, “War has been a subject of literature ever since The Iliad. The best books transcend their time and circumstances to say something enduring and truthful about war itself. The Yellow Birds belongs in that category.” Philipp Meyer also uses the word “category” in his praise and adds Tim O’Brien and Norman Mailer to the list of comparable authors: “The Yellow Birds belongs in the same category as Tim O’Brien’s The Things They Carried and Norman Mailer’s The Naked and the Dead.” Anthony Swofford, the author of Jarhead (2003), does the same genre assignment on Powers’ website: “This book will endure,” he writes, “Read it and then put it way up on that high rare shelf alongside Ernest Hemingway and Tim O’Brien” (“Reviews”). Such an effort speaks to the wide range of expectations that needs to be managed when the author is a veteran. That is, Powers chose to write fiction before he wrote his own memoir. Since the public lacks a
record of Powers’ relationship with war in an autobiography or some other documented personal statement, these blurbs somewhat acknowledge the power of combat gnosticism while they also account for why the cover isn’t stamped with the label, “Based on a true story.”

It will be interesting to see how Powers views The Yellow Birds a few decades from now. Tim O’Brien didn’t move on to the war novel until his memoir, If I Die in a Combat Zone, allowed him a way to empty his imagination of the heavy baggage of war experience. As Alex Vernon points out, “Had he not done so, his first novel about Vietnam, Going After Cacciato, would have been a different and lesser work, as his mind would not have been free to re-imagine the war” (30). Or, as O’Brien told Eric Schroeder, he used the memoir to get his combat experience “out of [his] system” so he could create art (148). The Naked and the Dead was a wildly successful bestseller, but in the introduction to the 50th Anniversary Edition (1998), Norman Mailer expresses a similar sentiment by discussing the author in the third person:

[H]e was naïve, he was passionate about writing, he knew very little about the subtler demands of a good style, he did not have a great deal of restraint, and he burned with excitement as he wrote. . . . The book was sloppily written in many parts . . . and there was hardly a noun in any sentence that was not holding hands with the nearest and most commonly available adjective. (xi)

Tobias Woolf is even harsher about his own first attempt to write war fiction after serving in Vietnam. He published a little-known first novel in Britain about a pair of malingering soldiers called Ugly Rumors in 1975 while he was attending Oxford. His novella The Barracks Thief appeared six years later, but today Woolf hasn’t quite reconciled the
animosity he has since developed for his first war novel. In 2011 reporter Elon Green wrote Woolf an email asking for comment on *Ugly Rumors*; Woolf responded,

> [I]t’s like serving someone a meal and then badmouthing it and mocking your guest for liking it. It’s just that I have no feeling for the book now, no interest in it, and no interest in attracting attention to it by talking about it.

(n. pag.)

It’s easy to be self-deprecating in retrospect, but it is also reasonable to think that no matter what direction Powers’ writing career takes he will remain pleased with *The Yellow Birds*.

Still, interviewers can’t stop forcing his experience into the pages of the novel. A purview of the interviews Powers has granted suggests that many consumers of his work still prefer—or, at a minimum, expect—the witness account to a more imaginative examination of war. In 2012 when Powers was interviewed on PBS, the interviewer’s second question was, “How much of the book, the novel, is based on your experience?” A couple months earlier, on C-SPAN, it took the interviewer three minutes to ask, “Is this based on your experience?” In both cases Powers answers in the negative, making the point that “the emotional core” is a part of the novel that he “identifies with strongly.” In both cases, you can almost feel each interviewer’s disappointment.\(^{28}\) In Hemingway’s short piece “On Writing,” Nick Adams comes to the conclusion that “Everything good he’d ever written he’d made up. None of it had ever happened” (237). But no matter what

\(^{28}\) In every interview I’ve located (NPR, *TIME* magazine, *STYLE Weekly*, *Shelf Unbound*, and Virginia Commonwealth University’s alumni newsletter, and others) each one includes the seemingly inevitable question about Powers’ experience and its direct representation in the novel.
Nick writes or how he writes it, “That was what the family couldn’t understand. They thought it was all experience” (238). Powers seems to have reached the same conclusion about the same expectations.

Kenneth Burke delineates the insistence for “truth” in art along two lines: “scientific truth” and “aesthetic truth” (*Counter-Statement* 42). Tim O’Brien does the same in *The Things They Carried* when he privileges “story truth” above “happening truth” (203). This is the double bind of the veteran writer of war fiction; experience provides the subject material upon which fictive accounts of war can be built, but the reader of contemporary war literature remains rooted in his or her desire for documentary verisimilitude. Art, Burke says, results whenever a writer “has converted his pattern of experience into a Symbolic equivalent” (*Counter-Statement* 157). That conversion suffers when we demand too much scientific truth in aesthetic representations. As Burke says, “it would be a great mistake to see art merely as a weak representation of some actual experience” (*Counter-Statement* 41). In “How to Tell a True War Story,” O’Brien examines the same idea when he writes: “You can tell a true war story by the questions you ask. Somebody tells a story, let’s say, and afterward you ask, ‘Is it true?’ and if the answer matters, you’ve got your answer” (79). As O’Brien suggests, when the subject of fiction is war or any other extreme or traumatic experience, the impulse to ask “is it true?” is a reasonable one. The auditor of that tale fails her critical role, however, if the answer matters (of course, what he means by “matters” is open to discussion).
The ubiquity of experience-tracing questions may be why Powers added an “Authors Note” to the 2013 paperback reprint of *The Yellow Birds*. In it, he sounds much like Kurt Vonnegut in the opening chapter to *Slaughter-House Five* and Vonnegut’s returning soldier who—initially—wishes to report back on what he has done and seen. Vonnegut writes:

> When I got home from the Second World War twenty-three years ago, I thought it would be easy for me to write about the destruction of Dresden, since all I would have to do would be to report what I had seen. And I thought, too, that it would be a masterpiece or at least make me a lot of money, since the subject was so big. But not many words about Dresden came from my mind then—not enough of them to make a book, anyway. And not many words come now. (3)

Powers writes, “*The Yellow Birds* began as an attempt to reckon with one question: What was it like over there?” (156). Like Vonnegut, though, Powers recognizes that that is an unreasonable goal, or, as Powers explains, “war is only like itself” (156). Again, this is a noteworthy perspective. Whereas it took Kurt Vonnegut twenty-three years to change his post-war writing goal from reportage to the masterpiece *Slaughterhouse-Five* (1969) and it took O’Brien an entire memoir in order to rid his fiction of the taint of autobiography, it only took Powers four years to acknowledge that fiction offered him something that memoir and autobiography did not.

Powers writes about his transformation in purpose and perspective:

> Though I hope I’ve told one small part of the truth about the war, what I’ve written is not meant to report or document, nor is it meant to argue or advocate. Instead, I tried with what little skill I have to create the cartography of one man’s consciousness, to let it stand, however briefly, as my reminder. (156)
In 2013 Jonathan Ruppin asked Powers if fiction is a better mode than “reportage” for “portraying the reality of combat?” (159). Powers responds: “I wouldn’t say that it works better, only that it works in a different way. The benefit is that it can confound expectations, particularly in the case of these wars that have been going on for so long” (159). This is an interesting response to a common question: fiction can “confound expectations” within a genre that is dominated by non-fictional combat narratives.

Regardless of Powers’ intention, his work most definitely asserts a rhetorical position regarding experience, memory, and guilt. Indeed, one could easily make the case that in order to “confound expectations” a writer must “advocate” or “argue” something about experience and art.

Regardless, the marketing strategy made apparent in the relentless name-dropping and generic categorizing of the blurbs implies the expectations that must be confounded and the depths of meaning that must be plumbed when a veteran crafts a purely imaginative work of war fiction. Such blurb-praise points to the fact that war fiction—particularly a war novel like Powers’—demands such genre and peer alignment. In a marketplace glutted with “real” representations of combat, the audience needs to be specially prepared. I am not arguing that the generic qualifications listed in the blurbs are unwarranted or ill conceived. Quite the contrary, The Yellow Birds perhaps needs them, both to sell its “emotional truth” and to properly situate it amid the panoply of other voices of war that precede it. These ubiquitous blurbs of praise are far from being the final word on Powers’ novel, but they are the most visible marks of what I find most
fascinating about *The Yellow Birds*: its negotiation of what Kenneth Burke calls the
“psychology of form.” For instance, it may be easy to compare *The Yellow Birds* with *All
Quiet on the Western Front* (1928), as Tom Wolfe does at the bottom of the book’s cover.
But this little blurb becomes a massive part of *The Yellow Birds*’ management of form
when we consider that Remarque’s World War I novel was trumpeted as “anti-war” by
pacifists while also being banned and burned by the Nazis as “the literary betrayal of the
soldiers of the Great War” (Barker 32-33). It carries even further when we recognize that
the author of that comparative blurb is the author of *The Right Stuff* (1979), a hero-
worshipping non-fictive chronicle of NASA’s first astronauts and test pilots, men Wolfe
repeatedly describes as “single-combat warriors” throughout his book (97).²⁹

Burke first built his ideas about the psychology of the audience and form in his
book *Counter-Statement* (1931). Drawing from his example of *Hamlet* and the
“assiduously prepared for” ghost, Burke argues that form is more about the psychology of
the audience than it is about the psychology of the hero (*Counter-Statement* 30):

> Or, seen from another angle, form is the creation of an appetite in the mind
> of the auditor, and the adequate satisfying of that appetite. This
> satisfaction—so complicated is the human mechanism—at times involves
> a temporary set of frustrations, but in the end these frustrations prove to be

²⁹ In *The Right Stuff*, Wolfe goes to extensive lengths to establish his use of the biblical
“superstitious aura of the single-combat warrior” in the context of the space race in order
to fit his tale within the formulae of combat gnosticism (231). The pilots who were
chosen to be our first astronauts wore the “archaic mantles of the single-combat warriors
of a long-since-forgotten time . . . Thus beat the mighty drum of martial superstition in
the mid-twentieth century.” (97-98). These men were hardly warriors in any combative
sense, so Wolfe invented the link to establish their martial hero status and fulfill the
demands of combat gnosticism.
simply a more involved kind of satisfaction, and furthermore serve to
make the satisfaction of fulfillment more intense . . . it involves desires
and their appeasements. (Counter-Statement 31)

With Burke as our guide, the critic can approach war fiction like The Yellow Birds and
avoid the common complaints and debates that face critics of war literature, namely, the
debate between authentic representations of real experience and artifice. Just as
Shakespeare’s play forces his audience to wait and anticipate—consciously or
unconsciously—until the fourth scene of the first act for the ghost of Hamlet’s father to
appear, the reader of The Yellow Birds is made equally ready for the common tropes of
war literature before he or she even reaches the first page. Thus, from a Burkan point-of-
view, the blurbs are linguistic alarm bells that call us to look more closely at the work’s
form and construction.

“Desires and their appeasements” separated by artful “frustrations”: if we analyze
The Yellow Birds accordingly, Powers’ “symbolic prowess” becomes quite clear
(Language 297). His management of form extends the project that began with the blurbs;
the publisher and the blurb-contributing fiction writers whet the appetite without, and
Powers continues it within with the war promise and the guilt that obligation carries.
And, Powers does it all without suggesting that this is in any way a documentation of one
man’s actual experience. With this in mind, Powers’ negotiation of the psychology of
form stands as his most significant feat with The Yellow Birds. Or, as Burke would
describe it, Powers’ symbolic “eloquence,” as he employs various methods of
“maintaining interest,” qualifies it as “pure art” (Counter-Statement 37). Managing the
novel’s form also allows him to develop Burke’s scapegoating process in complex ways and, ultimately, to redirect it.

Managing Appetites and Appeasements in the War Novel

Burke writes in *The Philosophy of Literary Form*:

> When you begin to consider the situations behind the tactics of expression, you will find tactics that organize a work technically *because* they organize it emotionally . . . Hence, if you look for a man’s *burden*, you will find the principle that reveals the structure of his unburdening; or, in attenuating form, if you look for his problem, you will find the lead that explains the structure of his solution. His answer gets its form by relation to the questions he is answering. (92)

In *The Yellow Birds*, Bartle’s burden (his war promise) is fairly easy to identify, but if we examine it with Burke’s methodology, the “structure of his unburdening” (the scapegoat mechanism) reveals Powers’ intricate negotiation of form. Moreover, if we accept the scapegoat principle as “a device natural to language” then we can witness the function of such literature as Powers’ serving a weakening effect on the spell that the scapegoat ritual casts (“Dramatism” 451). This is an important tool to bring to war literature, for as C. Allen Carter writes,

> Burke does not simply give us a theory of the multidimensional message and warn us about the ominous direction our messages can take us. He urges that we strengthen those linguistic purposes that might enable us to redirect the scapegoat process. (133)

When we trace the curative victims that Powers’ novel creates and then disposes of, one is left with more than a mere “cartography of one man’s consciousness.” That is, Bartle’s war promises and the guilt that follows them, since they are only tangentially related to
Murph and Sterling’s suicides, display the full spectrum of how obligation and guilt interact during war.

In Bartle’s case, he accepts all obligations in a rather grudging manner. When he makes his first promise to Sergeant Sterling, he reflects that he “didn’t want to be responsible for him” (36). When he repeats that promise to Ladonna Murphy, he thinks, “I barely knew the guy. Stop. Stop asking me questions. I don’t want to be accountable. I don’t know anything about this” (46). This reluctance is part of the mechanism by which Powers is able to spread around the guilt of Bartle’s war. Yes, Bartle ultimately agrees to bring Murph home alive, but Ladonna Murphy did not really allow him any other response. Bartle also volunteers for service in the U.S. Army, but someone or something else created the social environment that made his specific service in Iraq compulsory. In both cases, Bartle knows what he is getting into, but many, many others contributed to the order that made his obligations necessary, that made Bartle feel as if he “had no alternative,” no “other paths to take” (24).

“Modern criticism,” Kenneth Burke writes in Counter-Statement, is too prone to define the essence of art in terms of the artist’s weaknesses. It is, rather, the audience which dreams while the artist oversees the conditions which determine this dream. He is the manipulator of blood, brains, heart, and bowels which, while we sleep, dictate the mould of our desires. This is, of course, the real meaning of artistic felicity—an exaltation at the correctness of the procedure. (37)

That “exaltation” depends on the reader and the literary critic, however. By grounding our discussion of The Yellow Birds in Powers’ various strategies and techniques that develop and hold the reader’s interest, we can more precisely ascertain “what is going
on” in it (Philosophy 124). Powers’ form management ultimately means employing a number of methods that maintain and build readerly desires. Burke identifies three: surprise, suspense, and eloquence—eloquence being the skillful placing of the “facts” of a plot in a “more or less adequate sequence” (Counter-Statement 37). War literature like Powers’ operates much like classic drama, at least as far as Burke’s psychology of form is concerned. Burke points out that Aeschylus, Shakespeare, and Racine were “dealing with material which was more or less a matter of common knowledge so that the broad outlines of the plot were known in advance” (37). Powers’ contemporary audience comes to a war novel in much the same way; it is the fiction writer’s skill and management of surprise, suspense, and eloquence that can lend to its status as “pure art.” It is up to the literary scholar to parse the purity. As Burke puts it,

Truth in art is not the discovery of facts, not an addition to human knowledge in the scientific sense of the word. It is, rather, the exercise of human propriety, the formulation of symbols which rigidify our sense of poise and rhythm. Artistic truth is the externalization of taste. (Counter-Statement 42)

Thus, Powers confounds the expectations of what Burke calls the “racial appetites” of the auditor, and he does so immediately (Counter-Statement 41).

When we open The Yellow Birds, two epigraphs greet us. The first one is a “traditional U.S. Army Marching Cadence,” which is essentially Powers’ first attempt to manage form in his novel (the title has limited meaning without it):³⁰

³⁰ The “yellow birds” also refers to Murph’s story about his father bringing a dozen “caged canaries” home from the coal mine where he worked (139). According the tale, once the birds were let loose, they only “flitted and sang awhile before perching back
A yellow bird
With a yellow bill
Was perched upon
My windowsill

I lured him in
With a piece of bread
And then I smashed
His fucking head . . .

I was never in the Army, but I well remember the exact same “marching cadence” during my own Air Force basic training in 1995, though we called such chants “Jodies.” My “flight” of fellow basic trainees sang these rhythmic call-and-response songs (each line is called by a leader and then repeated by the group) everywhere we went; they kept us in step and they made us laugh. Powers is counting on the high probability that the typical reader is familiar with such chants too. Even if he or she never served in the military, the reader has probably encountered these songs in any number of other works of war literature, in television shows, or in war films (such as Heartbreak Ridge and Full Metal Jacket or comedies like Stripes or Private Benjamin). Tim O’Brien, for one, chose a line from the opening stanza of a well-known Jody for the title of his memoir If I Die in a Combat Zone, Box Me Up and Ship Me Home (1973).

According to Richard Burns, an African American soldier named Willie Duckworth “invented” the American military marching chant while he was running a marching drill in 1944 at a base in upstate New York (79). The army even called these atop their cages” (139). Like these birds, Murph and Bartle and Sterling voluntarily submit to the order that confines them.
songs “Duckworth chants” for a time before they eventually adopted the colloquial appellation of “Jodies.” As for the term “Jody,” Bruce Jackson points out in his book on southern blues that “Jody was around earlier” (169). That is, the name “Jody” comes from “Joe the Grinder,” a central character in a series of old blues lyrics dating as far back as 1939 (169). Pronounced as “Jody Grinder,” with “Grinder” operating as a metaphor “for a certain kind of coital movement,” Jackson explains that the character travelled from a blues song recorded in Gould, Arkansas in 1939 to a number of informal lyrics he later recorded in a southern Texas penitentiary in 1965 (167).31 Meanwhile, the character also moved on to Willie Duckworth and his marching chants.

The reasons for the common character in the blues, in prison, and in military life are fairly obvious. As Jackson observes, “life in an army during wartime and life in prison anytime have a number of aspects in common,” an anxiety that would perhaps resonate even more loudly for non-white soldiers (167). That is, prisoners and troops share a common anxiety about the woman left at home, an easy prey for a wife-stealing citizen like Joe the Grinder, or “Jody.” As Burns explains, Jodies not only “bring soldiers together as a disciplined force,” they also give voice to the collective frustrations of individuals “in limbo” who “will remain so until they die in combat or return home” (81, 83). Above all, Burns argues, Jodies function as a “safety valve that only insiders understand. In overtly complaining about what the free-world cuckolder is up to, soldiers

31 Jody the Grinder is also a character in a Merle Haggard song, “The Old Man from the Mountain” (1974).
are covertly registering resentment at those who keep them unfree and therefore unable to defend themselves against Jody” (84). That may be so, if we limit the Jodies under consideration to the ones about “Jody,” but many of the ones in circulation inside the military aren’t always about the cuckold back home; many are darkly or crudely humorous in sometimes obscene, violent, sexist, profane, racist, and homophobic ways, including the one Powers includes as an epigraph. Such insider language comes at the expense of other groups of human beings, a mechanism military members use to achieve unity and solidarity through demonizing or belittling linguistic descriptions. Thus, the modern Jodie somewhat accurately reflects the dialectic nature of a soldier’s existence; he is an agent of hegemonic violence, but he comforts himself with the idea that all his acts lack agency.

Tim O’Brien employs a Jody’s title as a blithe, gallows humor approach to the potentiality of his own death and survival in Vietnam. Powers’ novel, however, uses the Jody for two purposes: it establishes the work’s authenticity as a war novel, and it begins to build the novel’s scapegoating process. If the yellow bird of the title is killed off before the novel even begins, the reader must be on the look out for a character that will symbolically stand in for the dead bird. However, it bears noting that Powers’ doesn’t complete the Jody; he chooses instead to eliminate the final stanza. This is an exceedingly fascinating manipulation of form. It trades on both the authenticity implied by insider knowledge and the ideology of combat gnosticism, and it also constructs a device by which the rest of the agents in the novel can be examined in concert with each
other. If we are looking for a stand-in for the yellow bird, we are also on the lookout for a
stand-in for the killer of that yellow bird.

I remember that particular “Yellow Bird Jody” as concluding with a crass, crudely humorous twist. It went something like this:

The moral of
The story is,
To get some head
You need some bread.

Powers’ decision to leave this stanza out of his novel is probably a sound one. If, as
Burke would have us view art, form unifies symbol and motive, such levity would be out of place. Alone, the first two stanzas situate the work within the war novel genre, and they begin building suspense with the common themes of a typical war story: innocence is going to be shattered, and violence is going to become so commonplace that it will be expressed as another banal detail of war. Without this third stanza, the reader is of course invited to find symbolic substitutions for the bird on the windowsill and the killer of that bird. And, by indicating with the ellipses that a stanza has been excised, Powers calls into question the identity-erasing (or should we call it unifying?) indoctrination inherent to military training. One could propose the narrator’s following musings about war as another reason why this final stanza simply doesn’t fit: “I’d been trained to think that war was the great unifier, that it brought people closer together than any other activity on earth. Bullshit. War is the great maker of solipsists: how are you going to save my life today?” (12). The full Jody would not match such an attitude. Including it would also misdirect its syllogistic strength when it is considered alongside the second epigraph.
The second epigraph isn’t another Jody, but it operates in a similar way. That is, it announces a project common to other war literature while a closer look suggests a deeper message and a complication of our appetite for a scapegoat. A quote from Sir Thomas Browne’s 1658 work *Hydriotaphia*, it reads:

>To be ignorant of evils to come, and forgetful of evils past, is a mercifull provision in nature, whereby we digest the mixture of our few and evil dayes, and our delivered senses not relapsing into cutting remembrances, our sorrows are not kept raw by the edge of repetitions.

So, on the one hand, this passage’s place as an epigraph suggests that *The Yellow Birds* will serve the war-art-as-treatment-for-war-trauma paradigm that remains extremely common within the genre. Is this not what so many works of war literature seek, to inscribe the “cutting remembrance” and in so doing somehow blunt the “raw edges” of traumatic memories? However, Browne’s work, *Hydriotaphia* (which translates as “Urn Burial”), is an extensive meditation on the burial practices of ancient cultures. In a long march through these various practices, Browne repeatedly concludes that each one is a pathetic human gesture of futility built in response to the finality of death.

I can hear an echo of this same sentiment in Powers’ “Author’s Note” when he writes about his aborted attempt to create a “real” monument to experience and memory. “War is only like itself,” Powers concludes in the note (156). This position falls in line with the combatant first solipsism Bartle describes above even though it is dangerously close to normalizing war. That position, that “war is only like itself,” is a difficult one to maintain if we consider the same war from the perspective of an Iraqi civilian. This is what makes the two epigraphs such a strong manipulation of form. Browne’s epigraph
could be taken as a gentle challenge to any argument about the singularity of war or war’s experience. While Browne judges man hopeful in his attempts to create such “dying mementos,” he also judges humanity as ultimately pitiful in our universal impulses to create lasting monuments to any fleeting moment of existence, not just traumatic ones (136). So where is Powers’ swerve with this epigraph? Perhaps there is none, but it suggests a connection that may not be immediately apparent and one that counteracts the solipsistic attitude of the narrator. It is almost as if it replaces the missing final stanza the “Yellow Bird Jody.” Indeed, shortly before the passage that became Powers’ second epigraph, Browne writes that our memories are “the entelechia and soul of our subsistences” (134). He continues, writing that, sadly,

There is no antidote against the Opium of time, which temporally considereth all things; Our Fathers find their graves in our short memoires, and sadly tell us how we may be buried in our Survivors. Grave-stones tell truth scarce forty years. Generations passe while some trees stand, and old families last not three oaks. (134)

Thus, if we look at the epigraphs together, we can reduce them to the following dramatictistic elements: innocence symbolized by the yellow bird is violently scapegoated (the act) in a military setting established by the Jody (scene) by the typical, indoctrinated military member (agent) through trickery (agency). The only element missing is the purpose, the final accounting for why the agent (the “I” voice in the Jody) acted as he did, why he killed the bird.

This is, possibly, another reason why Powers did not include the final stanza. Had he, it would provide a purpose in the form of the crude pun on the bird’s head and a sexual act, a motive that doesn’t exactly serve Powers’ overall intent with his novel.
Leaving it out implies that there is no purpose for such violence; it is just what one does when one goes to war. It also acts according to Derrida’s concept of “trace,” the left meaning by the erasure that serves to distinguish readers into two camps—insider and outsider (61). Thus, the second epigraph prevents the missing stanza from the Jody operating as an insider’s wink. As William Rueckert writes, for Burke, “there are no purposeless acts, only an act the purpose of which is not yet known, or not yet fully understood” (Kenneth Burke 178). With the second epigraph, Powers’ novel proposes through symbolic implication that such an attitude about killing and violence, no matter how blithely it is represented or how grudgingly the culpability is accepted, is most likely humanly impossible as well. Better yet, the epigraphs suggest that carrying such an attitude to any motive cannot occur without incurring massive amounts of guilt. As Browne writes, the human agent will invariably “relapse” into the “mixture” of his “few and evil days.”

It’s worth commenting here on the term “entelechia,” since Browne and Burke both use it in their philosophies, and Powers demonstrates it in his novel. Browne uses it in the Aristotelian sense; in De Anima, Aristotle formulates the term entelekheia as a description of physical matter as it is realized in the soul. In Aristotle’s formulation, the soul is the actuality of matter’s potential and eventual embodiment. In Dramatism and Development (1972), Burke explains: “the resources of symbolic action culminate in a possibly non-Aristotelian application of the Aristotelian ‘entelechy’” (36). Or, as Burke expands, it is through symbolic action that “man might (not so successfully) actualize his
potential as a rational animal” (“Why Satire?” 314). Thus, Burke stretches Aristotle’s concept and applies it to all aspects of human verbal structures, including our impulse to create art, and he clarifies “entelechy” to mean “tracking down the implications of a position, going to the end of the line” (314). Entelechy, then, is one of Burke’s defining ontological conditions, one that he roots within his rhetorical scapegoating concept and his definition of man.

Burke’s definition of man includes entelechy as a crucial motive for all human drama, especially since all language is appropriately conceived as symbolic action: “Man is goaded by the spirit of hierarchy (or moved by the sense of order) and rotten with perfection” (Language 16). Thus, man cannot avoid being moved (or “goaded”) by this “rotten” entelechal principle, “a principle of perfection implicit in the nature of symbol systems” and “central to the nature of language as motive” (Language 17). The urge to achieve perfection—through art, technology, or military might—drives every human or political impulse, including the need to create monuments, to invade other countries, or to craft a work of fiction that attempts to render memory into some transmittable form.

Thus, through the terministic screen established by the epigraphs, we are “goaded” to track violence visited upon innocence and the eventual reckoning with the resulting guilt (Browne’s “mercifull provision in nature”). Since man is destined to err (or rot) in his striving to impose order (the entelechial principal), one can trace Burke’s paradigm of history over the epigraphs, a paradigm Burke renders as a poem in The Rhetoric of Religion (1961):
Here are the steps
In the Iron Law of History
That welds Order and Sacrifice:
Order leads to Guilt
(for who can keep commandments)
Guilt needs Redemption
(for who would not be cleansed!)
Order
Through Guilt
To Victimage
(hence: Cult of the Kill) . . . (4-5)

The reader of *The Yellow Birds* hasn’t even reached the first page of the novel, but the
dramatistic structure is already established according these Iron Laws. As Burke writes,
“For the so-called ‘desire to kill’ a certain person is much more properly analyzable as a
desire to *transform the principle* which that person *represents*” (13). Both scapegoats in
*The Yellow Birds* commit suicide, an act that fits well within Burke’s cult of the kill;
“Since imagery built about the active, reflexive, and passive forms of death (killing, self-
killer, and being killed) so obviously contributes to dramatic intensity” (13). Bartle, our
hero, will fail to maintain order, as we soon find out, in the form of his war promise—for
who can keep a promise? He will experience massive guilt and spend years seeking
redemption, first in his fantasies of suicide and then, through vicarious victimage, in the
suicide of his superior, Sergeant Sterling.

For all of these reasons, Powers’ epigraphs are much more than token witticisms
or well-turned phrases that lend their authority to the words that follow. When we bring
Burke’s method to them, they suggest a structure while simultaneously confounding our
expectations. Or, in Burkean terms, they eloquently build suspense and the possibility for
surprise. We know, from them, that someone will be the scapegoat, or more properly, a symbolic substitution for the yellow bird with the smashed head; we just don’t know whose head will be smashed yet (though, to be sure, it doesn’t take long to find out about Murph’s suicidal mortification). Since any sense of order, driven by entelechy, implies an overarching hierarchy, the epigraphs suggest that the following novel will be an antidote against the psychosis of hierarchy inherent to the military, traumatic experience, and war.

*Tracing the Scapegoats’ Demise*

As we move into the text, we know that the protagonists are at war, suggested by the cover art, the blurbs, and the epigraphs, but we don’t know exactly where that war is taking place yet. We get it on the next page, though, announced quietly in the first chapter’s title. Actually, it is less of a title and more of a label, a tag of war’s particular setting: “September 2004, Al Tafar, Ninevah Province, Iraq.” With the biblical implications of “Ninevah” and the 9/11 implications of “September,” this title bears comparison to the following oft-quoted passage from Hemingway’s *A Farewell to Arms*:

There were many words that you could not stand to hear and finally only the names of places had dignity. Certain numbers were the same way and certain dates and these with the names of the places were all you could say and have them mean anything. Abstract words such as glory, honor, courage, or hallow were obscene beside the concrete names of villages, the numbers of roads, the names of rivers, the numbers of regiments and the dates. (185)

Abstractions like “glory” and “honor” and “courage” pale in their ability to capture the depth of human tragedy in war—they decline into cliché as their symbolic capabilities lose strength—especially when they are aligned with the synecdochic complexities
captured with the name of a battlefield, a massacre site, or of a unit. Think of a few, and Hemingway’s point is immediately clear. Sand Creek, Dresden, Chosin Reservoir, My Lai, Fallujah, Seal Team 6: each one stands for so much more than the actions of war or massacre they reference. They become sign-carrying symbols that capture the full emotional power of each contextual situation. That meaning, however, is contextually limited.

In a post-9/11 America, “September 2004, Al Tafar, Ninevah Province, Iraq” does the same thing. Given our prior knowledge that this is indeed a war novel, all we need to establish war’s location is a cluster of words like “Iraq” and “September” and, well, any word prefaced with the Arabic article “Al.” We don’t even need “Tafar” or “Ninevah Province, Iraq.” In the proper context (a date after September 11, 2001), Al equals Iraq, and Iraq equals war. With this date and location, then, Powers again continues the project of establishing the novel’s form that began with the blurbs. This first chapter launches us into war, keeping us there even though less than half of the action of the novel is actually located in Iraq. The difference between war’s address (the chapter’s title) and the near-anthropomorphic construction of the “war” described in the first line may seem inconsequential; however, examined according to Burke’s dramatistic pentad, the form of this novel takes shape.

“The war tried to kill us in the spring” (3): thus begins this war novel, but Powers denies “war” its expected rhetorical function as the scene of the opening pages. These first few words throw us into war, but what follows is neither unambiguous propaganda
nor banal decoration. “Iraq” is the scene instead of “war” (since each word implies the other one), so war becomes an agent of the novel right alongside the soldiers. Akin to war gods in Greek mythology, war becomes what Burke calls a “super-agent” (*Grammar* xx). Not only is war the first noun in the entire work, the first subject, it is the catalyst that motivates Bartle and Murph and Sterling to act. Symbolically, it will kill them and allow them to kill, and like Ares, it is ubiquitous, overwhelming, and insatiable. And so the protagonists wallow here, under the comforting assumption that the “war god” mutes their own agency, that it alone wields all the power in this place therefore deserves all of the blame (*Counter-Statement* 144).

Their war is “super-scene, super-act, and super-agent” all in one (*Grammar* 71). As such, Bartle immediately shuffles it to the top of the symbolic hierarchy of the novel:

> While we slept, the war rubbed its thousand ribs against the ground in prayer. When we pressed onward through exhaustion, its eyes were white and open in the dark. While we ate, the war fasted, fed by its own depravation. It made love and gave birth and spread through fire. (3)

And in this way, war becomes symbolically effective, thanks to Powers’ form. That is, it *acts*. As Burke says,

> The objective writer attempts to make effective Symbols; the subjective writer attempts to make Symbols effective (that is, constructs a Symbol as the replica of his own pattern of experience, and having constructed it, schemes to find ways of making it effective). (*Counter-Statement* 195)

The first person plural pronoun is all we know of the human beings, but the audience is asked to equate war with everything else that could potentially express a sense of agency. In these first few paragraphs, war is the only agent in sight, synecdochic for everything else, including death, violence, dust, and fear. Since war is the only thing that can act,
then, it performs functions denied the human beings. It makes love and gives birth, but the living humans act intransitively. The soldiers don’t fight an enemy; they “moved” and “slept” and “pressed onward” and “waited” (3, 5). This makes sense because Bartle and his comrades have long used this kind of construction to assuage their own guilt. It allows them to claim a lack of agency; they are nothing but passive objects that flow according to the super-agent’s whim. This is why it is so difficult for Bartle to truly atone for the guilt he feels later. It isn’t until he is able to look back from his “position of safety in a warm cabin above a clear stream in the Blue Ridge” mountains that he can see that this dramatistic situation worked so well because it was a coping mechanism, one designed to mitigate his own (deserved) feelings of guilt (11).

In the second paragraph of the novel, war the super-agent is as present and undeniable as the seasons. It is as inescapable as the sun:

Then, in summer, the war tried to kill us as the heat blanched all color from the plains. The sun pressed into our skins, and the war sent its citizens rustling into the shade of white buildings. It cast a white shade on everything, like a veil over our eyes. It tried to kill us every day. (3)

Again, Burke’s logology applies: war and the sun are both defined by their negative. 32

This makes perfect sense, too; we tend to mark the sun by its shine, but an equally appropriate marker is the shade it casts. War casts a “white shade on everything,” and

32 “The negative command,” Burke writes, stands “as the moral center of man’s linguistic genius” (Counter-Statement 216). Theological or otherwise, Burke says, “our character is built of our responses . . . to the thou-shalt-not’s of morality” (Language 11). Even words, he points out, exist due to some “implied sense of negativity in the ability to use words at all. For to use them properly, we must know that they are not the things they stand for” (Language 12).
Bartle recognizes himself there so that war becomes a soothing thing, a blanket under which he can hide. Thus, it is only in this dialectic construction of war that the narrator exists anywhere in the dramatistic pentad. Grasping at the idea that they lack all agency, Bartle and his fellow soldiers comfort themselves by noting that they are not among the “bloating piles in the troughs of the hills outside the cities, the faces puffed and green, allergic now to life” (4).

But what are they? Stuck in war’s shade, these soldiers, these non-agents, think that they exist as the negative of war and nothing more. Like the epigraphs, this is a significant construction. We can see that war is an undeniable force of nature. And since the audience meets the war right up front, we can then more easily accept the extent of its drug-like effects on the soldiers and therefore prepare us to accept any victims who may appear to serve as a curative for Bartle’s guilt (and our own). Considering that war is oftentimes measured empirically by a count of casualties (how rhetorical value is created through rhetorical sacrifice), war’s negative is noted by accounting the many who have not become its victims yet, war’s unclaimed scapegoats. There are dead people everywhere, but Bartle and Murph make a game out of marking the empirical accounting of war’s casualties—“the war had killed thousands by September” (4). Then, they mark war’s negative by identifying himself among the merely not-counted-yet—“But it had killed fewer than a thousand soldiers like me and Murph” (4). Meanwhile, the reader must admit that the negative of war is not peace, that the opposite of “soldiers like me and Murph” is not “Iraqi civilians” or “insurgent fighters.”
The “thousands” is the way Murph and Bartle track and recognize and order the super-agent. One thousand: it is the clear and definite number Murph and Bartle avoid; they do not want to be the one thousandth American soldier killed in Iraq even though the war has killed way more than a thousand “others” already. Bartle counts up to the number, reflecting later on how important it seemed then. Sergeant Ezekial Vasquez from Laredo, Texas, is #748 (12). Specialist Miriam Jackson, aged nineteen, is #914 (13). Bartle’s post-war narration, however, allows him to look back and recognize the foolishness in his counting: “We didn’t know the list was limitless. We didn’t think beyond a thousand” (14). Bartle recognizes too late that his self-conception in Iraq was completely occluded by the massive symbolic presence of war. It isn’t until he is out of prison and in his warm cabin in the Blue Ridge Mountains that he can see—something we can see all along the way—that he and Murph were always more than agency-free numbers that hadn’t been counted yet.

If there is any doubt remaining in the reader’s mind that he should keep reading in order to locate the novel’s curative victims and the war’s guilty perpetrators, the god-term war and its rhetorical function should remove all doubt immediately. The seasons, the weather, the sun, the landscape, the human beings, the threat of death: all of these things are known only through the screen of war. War does rub “its thousand ribs against the ground in prayer,” like a Muslim prostrate on a prayer rug, but it is more of a unifying symbol than one that indicates difference or draws a dialectical border between the subject and the enemy object (3). “Pioneers” and “citizens” people this space, not
Americans and hajjis (3). Since Bartle and Murph are obsessed with the number one thousand, the metaphor above might even suggest a different supplicant. War’s ribs don’t symbolize feared or hated Muslims; each one of war’s ribs is a dead American soldier. Thus, Bartle is left to do all of his difference marking between himself and the rest of the characters by delineating himself from Sterling and Murph, long after their wartime interactions.

The perpetrators of war’s violence are everywhere, though, appropriately, Bartle’s narration doesn’t return to the idea of being the one-thousandth American soldier to die in Iraq until the final chapter, when he is in prison, marking the wall of his cell for each event he thinks he “remembers”:

My first few months inside, I spent a lot of time trying to piece the war into a pattern. I developed the habit of making a mark on my cell wall when I remembered a particular event, thinking that at some later date I could refer to it and assemble the marks into a story that made sense. (216)

The guards think he is marking time until he is released, and one of them asks, “Must be nine eighty-three, nine ninety, right? Almost a thousand?” (218). Then, and only then, does Bartle think of Murph, “who was not counted for a while” since Bartle and Sterling covered up the circumstances of his death. He and the reader will never know if Murph was the one-thousandth, nor will we know “what his number would have been if [Bartle] hadn’t lied” (218). By this time, however, Bartle can draw a certain relief from recognizing this ambiguity; he has reached a place where he can admit that it doesn’t matter where Murph ranked on that arbitrary list just as it doesn’t matter how many days have passed since he entered the prison. He has matured just enough to both comfort and
punish himself with the fact that he will never be on the list of the dead, a list that—if it actually included a full accounting of the number of Iraqi and American dead—should be counted in the hundreds of thousands.

We empathize with Bartle’s dilemma as the surviving, coping soldier, but we can see something that he doesn’t recognize. We can see that, in his world, “war” masks his own culpability, a construction that ultimately allows him to survive. However, we can also see that there can be no consciousness expanding cathartic release in such a setup. For Bartle, war only confines and deadens. The opening pages may have asked us to treat “war” as the only actor, as the only perpetrator, but that system falls apart as soon as it is erected. Like the yellow bird lured to the windowsill by a piece of bread, Bartle asks us to see him in a similar light. He wants us to recognize that his wartime acts may not have been entirely noble, but he had to consider them as “necessary” in order to survive (11). Bartle and Murph and Sterling were all lured to the “windowsill” of war, but Bartle just takes longer to understand that he is no easy fit as the symbolic “yellow bird” in this war. Indeed, his delayed awareness of that fact is essentially what saves him. Murph understands his symbolic role in war (his agency) and commits suicide by walking into enemy territory, naked. Sterling follows suit when he returns to the United States and puts a bullet through his own head. Unlike Bartle, they assert themselves dramatistically in the super-agent’s wake: they die by their own devices (agency), to cope with their own guilt (purpose), alone (scene). Thus, Bartle’s narration essentially asks us to witness the
aftermath in the one soldier who does not succeed in purging his own guilt in a similar manner.

In this way we can accept Bartle’s insistence on maintaining his agency-free perception of self with trepidation. We understand why, when he looks back, that he remembers not being “surprised by the cruelty of [his ambivalence] then” and how “nothing seemed more natural than someone getting killed” (11). We can see why he needs to remember carrying a rifle and pointing it at human beings and pulling the trigger and seeing dead people “lying in the courtyards of the city or in its lace of alleys” without locating himself anywhere therein as the causal agent (15). And it makes a certain twisted sense for him to count “X number of enemies lying dead in a dusty field” (15). After all, when Bartle remembers pulling the trigger on his rifle and firing a bullet for the first time in combat, he describes the act not as “firing” his gun but as “releas[ing]” the bullet “into the field,” as if the bullet and the gun operated with minds of their own (20). When he shoots at a man behind a “low wall in a courtyard” with the rest of his unit, he does think, for a moment, “What kind of men are we?” (21). But then he quickly recognizes how helpful it is to refrain from assigning responsibility:

[The man he shot] may have been frightened, but I didn’t mind that so much because I was frightened too, and I realized with a great shock that I was shooting at him and that I wouldn’t stop until I was sure that he was dead, and I felt better not knowing we were killing him together and that it was just as well not to be sure you are the one who did it. (21)

Powers avoids the emotional hypertrophy and atrophy of other more formulaic “chronicles” of war stories because these opening pages complicate the mere naming and labeling of how one object lies against another. Bartle’s obsessive concern with numbers
and his dialectical self-identification established through war’s ubiquity is part of Powers’ intricate development of what R. G. Collingwood calls “the constructive imagination” (242). As Bartle concludes, history is “imagination or it’s nothing” that is constructed and then dismantled like “the threads of a rope can be unwoven” (100, 101). As Hayden White suggests in his essay “The Historical Text as Literary Artifact” (1986), the constructive imagination differs little from Kant’s supposition of a priori understanding of representation (84). That is, it may be impossible to perceive both sides of a tabletop at the same time, but we can still be confident it has two sides because one side implies the other. Thus, a “constructive imagination” helps a reader complete the gaps inherently left in any story and draw from that story a usable version of something he can call history or extract as a recognizable “meaning.” But, as White points out, “no historical event is intrinsically tragic; it can only be conceived as such from a particular point of view or from within the context of a structured set of events of which it is an element enjoying a privileged place” (84). This is what Powers puts to good use in his fiction; with his control of form, he structures the events of war so that the tragic scapegoat is elevated to a properly “privileged” place.

White calls such placing “emplotment,” or, as he defines it, the “encodation of the facts contained in the chronicle as components of specific kinds of plot structure” (83). Thus, when Powers delivers the first scapegoat, early on in the novel, the audience is fully prepared to accept him as a vessel of purgation:

It never happened. I didn’t die. Murph did. And though I wasn’t there when it happened, I believe unswervingly that when Murph was killed, the
dirty knives that stabbed him were addressed “To whom it may concern.” Nothing made us special. Not living. Not dying. Not even being ordinary. (14)

With Murph’s death, dirty knives kill, not an insurgent or an enemy. As Yossarian says in *Catch-22*, “The enemy . . . is anybody who’s going to get you killed, no matter which side he’s on” (120). *The Yellow Birds* suggests the same thing. There is only one agent—war—thus everyone else is collectively the war’s enemy; they are all enemies of war instead of each other.

We encounter references to an enemy early in the second chapter, but that enemy remains description-free and unnamed, euphemistically referred to with this war’s label for the feared enemy Other: the misappropriated *hajji*. Bartle and the rest of his platoon learn to use the term to describe the enemy, and—fittingly—they “learn” the nomenclature from Sergeant Sterling, the speaker of the term for its first three appearances in the novel (17, 19, 39). During the opening battle scene when Bartle fires his rifle for the first time, he refers to the enemy with nothing but the third-person plural pronoun “they.” As Bartle remembers the battle,

> And *they* did come, shadowed in window. *They* came out from behind woven prayer rugs and fired off bursts and the bullets whipped past and we’d duck and listen as they smacked against the concrete and mud-brick and little pieces flew in every direction. *They* ran through trash-strewn alleys, past burning drums and plastic blowing like clumps of thistle over the ancient cobblestones. (20, emphasis added)

Powers emplots the events of war so that the enemy is completely stripped of identity without becoming an actual member of the dramatistic scene. As Sergeant Sterling says, “It’s their idea every time. They ought to kill themselves instead of us” (42). This
strategy of reference teaches Bartle how to maintain his agency-free observer’s role, an omniscient perspective that subtly invalidates the motives of fighters who might “hide” behind a religion that uses prayer rugs. In all its subjective glory, Bartle deploys war as the only thing that can threaten or destroy, but we can already tell that this perspective will never lead to a healthy or lasting truth. At one point, Bartle pauses long enough to mention, “I wasn’t sure who ‘they’ were” (43). Bartle’s warlike actions remain unredeemed, actions that should perhaps remain that way.

Since the antagonist of this narrative is not a hated and demonized Other, the narrative is in dire need of a scapegoat. As Powers says, fiction can “confound expectations.” Or, he could have said, fiction allows the emplotment of scapegoats in such a way that it confounds the very process of scapegoating itself. In *Permanence and Change*, Burke writes:

> In referring to the curative totality of the perfect sacrifice, as modified by the predominantly secular nature of modern civilization, we would suggest that the kind of victimage most ‘natural’ to such a situation would be some variant of the Hitlerite emphasis (which put the stress upon the idea of a total cathartic enemy rather than upon the idea of a total cathartic friend). (288)

Whereas Hitler scapegoated the international Jew, Powers redirects his scapegoating, away from *hajji* or the wholesale Othering of an enemy and onto two American soldiers. Not only do we need scapegoats, but we also need antecedents for the “us” of the first line of the novel, for the “I” of the “Yellow Bird Jody,” and for the yellow bird itself. We don’t have a name for the first person narrator—Bartle—until we near the end of the first chapter (17). So it is fitting that the first name we encounter is Murph (3). Even more
appropriate is the fact that the second named character is Sergeant Sterling (6). We do meet a few named family members (like Ladonna Murphy) and a few named ancillary characters, but most of the other characters only carry labels of rank or function (a lieutenant, an embedded reporter, a priest in a German chapel, a glory-hounding colonel, a war-crime investigator). Bartle, Murph, and Sterling will remain the only three significant characters with names. And so, the audience’s appetite for the mortification or redemption of these three characters is fully formed early on, and as the plot unfolds through the subsequent scenes, the audience’s help remains necessary to complete the Burkean pentad. Complicit, then, the audience must adopt its own proper quota of guilt. Burke writes,

```
If order, then guilt; if guilt, then need for redemption; but any such ‘payment’ is victimage. Or: if action, then drama; if drama, then conflict; if conflict, then victimage . . . A dramatistic view of human motives thus culminates in the ironic admonition that perversions of the sacrificial principle (purification by scapegoat, congregation by segregation) are the constant temptation of human societies. (“Dramatism” 342, 343)
```

Following Burke’s if/then statements, we could go so far as to make some simple substitutions: if Iraq, then war (entelechy driven order); if war then death (and attendant guilt); if guilt, then scapegoating (through Murph and Sterling’s deaths). This equation is true for soldiers and civilians alike, or, in this case, for Bartle and for the reader of The Yellow Birds.
As C. Allen Carter reminds, “Some stories, however, are better left unperfected, for inevitably what is perfected is a story of victimage. The troubling fact is that our myths tend to ‘go scapegoat’” (46). The Yellow Birds is one of those imperfected stories of victimage. It definitely “goes scapegoat,” but with Burke’s methodology we can see how it confounds the process slightly and thus manages to achieve something that is extremely difficult in war literature: a withheld complete redemption of both the hero and the audience. The result is a nagging culpability, spread appropriately across all sectors of war’s drama (see fig. 4).
“Getting Deviant”: the Scapegoating of Sergeant Sterling

The entire book is a flashback that covers nine years of Bartle’s life, but actual war only occupies the ten shorts months following Bartle’s first meeting with Murph at Fort Dix:

[T]en months, give or take, from that day to the day he died. It might seem like a short time, but my whole life since has merely been a digression from those days, which now hang over me like a quarrel that will never be resolved. (30)

Thus, Bartle’s “quarrel” is with his own accountability and the scapegoating process established in the opening pages of the novel. Bartle transgresses by making a promise and writing a letter. He will transgress further by committing a few war crimes and covering up Murph’s death, and yes, he mourns Murph, but his guilt is actually rooted in his acceptance of his own agency, something he has never been able to do. Symbolized with two inertia-driven byways—the Tigris River in Iraq and the James River in Richmond—Bartle’s service has little direct causal relationship with his guilt. He remembers “struggling to find a sense of urgency that seemed proportional” to his preparation to go to war, and he locates that lack of urgency at the very beginning of his military career in basic training (a time when he sang blithely about mindless violence in the “Yellow Bird Jody” from the epigraph). Back then, he recalls, “it had dawned on me that I’d never have to make a decision again” (35).

It was liberating at first, but that lack of agency ends up haunting him until the novel’s end: “Eventually,” he concludes, “I had to learn that freedom is not the same thing as the absence of accountability” (35). He doesn’t kill Murph, nor does he directly
or indirectly cause Murph’s death, but he does act (or as he puts it, he experiences “freedom”), in Burkean terms, to establish order and a hierarchy. As Burke reminds us, “if order, then guilt.” Bartle knows he made a mistake trying to force order onto Murph’s life:

I know it was a terrible thing to write that letter. What I don’t know is where it fits in with all of the other terrible things I think about. At some point I stopped believing in significance. Order became an accident of observation. (31)

Like the circumstances of Murph’s death, we don’t know anything about this letter’s contents. But as far as Bartle’s purgation is concerned, neither one really matters. We do know, however, that Bartle sent this mysterious letter to Murph’s mother after Murph died, and we know that Bartle used it to impersonate her son, a ruse she easily sniffed out. Thus, Bartle’s guilt is purged, difficult though it may be to locate in his “war promise” and the mysterious letter.

Here is Powers’ carefully built suspense: we keep reading because we need to know why Bartle lied in the letter and why he feels such guilt over an innocuous promise. More importantly, we need to know why he is in prison. In the jumbled temporality of the novel’s structure, however, Bartle’s redemption comes first. That is, the entire novel is a first person reflection from somewhere beyond war. Before we even have a victim, we know Bartle is to be eventually redeemed by the cult of the kill because, at a minimum, he survives long enough to tell this tale we are reading, which stands as his final, if incomplete, purging. The reflective nature of the narrative allows Bartle to go back and trace his failures and crimes, and we go with him, to examine the scapegoat mechanism.
that follows. He is full of pain and grief over Murph’s death, but no matter how hard he tries, he cannot locate himself in its causes. In Iraq, when Murph begins falling apart emotionally, Bartle remembers:

[H]ow desperately I wanted to measure the particulars of Murph’s new, strange behavior and trace it back to one moment, to one cause, to one thing that I would not be guilty of. . . . I couldn’t think of anything else. I thought a lot about that ridiculous promise I’d made to Murphy’s mother. I could even remember what I’d said, or even what had been asked for. Bring him home? What, in one piece? At all? I couldn’t remember. Would I have failed if he wasn’t happy, if he was no longer sane? (155)

Murphy is dead at no fault of Bartle’s, so we must find another site for Bartle’s vicarious victimage: Sergeant Sterling. This man will carry all of Bartle’s actual sins until he puts a bullet through his own head and thus becomes Bartle’s scapegoat and bringer of Bartle’s partial redemption.

The victimage of Sterling is the most poignant development in the entire novel, and as such, Bartle’s catharsis is delayed and delayed, layered between his experience, its recollection, and Murph’s slow unraveling. Sergeant Sterling is our first and, in the end, only candidate to stand in as the speaker of the “Yellow Bird Jody.” He is the model soldier, the example these young men are ordered to follow and mimic. Throughout the opening chapters, Bartle lays out the case for Sterling’s appropriateness as a perfect scapegoat. We get an extensive list of expected soldier imagery associated with Sterling. He is an excellent NCO who leads but also skillfully panders to his officers: “Sterling seemed to know exactly how hard to push the LT so that discipline remained” (17). He is humble; he wins medals and awards, but Bartle notices that he never wears them (35). When the men are all awarded medals after their harrowing firefight from the opening
pages, they all cynically ignore the reading of the citations while “only Sterling kept his military bearing and remained attentive” (152). He is the “tall and trimly muscled” perfect soldier, with “blond hair and blue eyes” (35). The captain in charge of their company even introduces Sterling, literally, as the poster-child of war: “Sergeant Sterling,” the man exclaims, “will be put on the fucking recruiting posters, men” (35). Sterling confirms all the negative stereotypes of a soldier at war too: he reads porn magazines; he abuses a girl in a German brothel; and he is very good at killing. A less-deviant Iago, Sterling creates a “tinge of malice vaguely diffused through the texture of events and relationships [that] can here be condensed into a single principle” (“Othello” 169). Burke wrote those words in his essay about Othello, but they easily apply to The Yellow Birds as well.

Bartle went to war and, for a moment, became the speaker of the “Yellow Bird Jody,” an agency-free—but necessary—soldier who responds to the demands of war according to training and rote practice and an entelechy-driven desire to “be good.” He wanted to be a “good” soldier, and he wanted to be a “good” man and a keeper of promises. He also wanted to survive. However, all of these desires prove difficult to reconcile due to his conflicting notions of guilt and powerlessness. Or, as Powers told an interviewer when he was asked if Bartle’s guilt is fueled by Murph’s death or some sort of survivor’s guilt,

I would not be able to separate the two. The root of his guilt is that he wanted to be good, and he tried to be good, but he failed. His conflict is between his desire to redeem that failure and his acceptance of complete powerlessness. (Ruppin 160)
Bartle wanted to be like Sterling, who instructs Bartle and Murph to “stay deviant in this motherfucker” and “dig deep. Find that nasty streak” in order to survive war (156, 42). The problem is that Murph’s underlying humanity causes him to fail in that digging almost immediately while Bartle succeeds. It isn’t until later that he is able to collect all the appropriate attendant guilt, all the baggage that properly goes with staying “deviant,” with finding a “nasty streak.”

In a recorded “conversation” with Tobias Wolff, a viewer in the audience asked Tim O’Brien about traumatic stress and the various ways soldiers cope with their traumatic experiences. He responded in a way that is extremely relevant to Bartle’s response to his own role in war:

I worry that there’s not enough trauma . . . It feels to me as if we as humans tend to heal too well and too quickly and too thoroughly. The scabs are too thick so we don’t feel too much. I think you are nuts if you come back from what I went through, and you aren’t nuts . . . You are crazy if you don’t have late night anxiety . . . If you don’t have anger issues inside of you, I think you’re crazy, that you’re not human . . . I feel that one of the ways to deal with trauma is to be traumatized, to acknowledge that I was hurt, that I’m still hurting, and that I hurt other people. (n. pag.)

Bartle accumulates huge amounts of guilt for being like Sterling, for forcing thick scabs over the trauma of his experiences. At first, he manages to construct his experience of war in such a way that mitigates his own agency, but then, after Murph’s death, he is forced to see the truth of the matter, that one cannot act as he did without collecting massive amounts of guilt, guilt that must be purged.

It takes a long time for Bartle to recognize this since he and Murph both understand that arguing with Sterling’s example would be nothing more than redrawing
the lines of a map one isn’t even using. For, as Bartle ponders, a map is less a “picture of facts and more a poor translation in two dimensions” (225). Indeed, Ladonna Murphy visits Bartle in jail and brings him a map of Iraq. At first, Bartle thinks, “it was an odd gesture” (224). He folds and unfolds it, “struggling with the arrangement of the arbitrary lines that it would fold itself along when I went to put it up at night. . . . The grid seemed so foreign and imprecise. Just a place scaled out of existence on a map” (224). This map symbolism runs parallel to Sterling’s scapegoat role. Bartle remarks that, during war, men like Sterling are “necessary,” but he hates him for it (19). He hates Sterling for “the way he excel[s] in death and brutality and domination” (19). And he hates Sterling’s bravery, a “narrowly focused” bravery that was “pure and unadulterated” (43). Such bravery is, Bartle admits, almost obligatory in war, but it is “a kind of elemental self-sacrifice, free of ideology, free of logic. He would put himself on the gallows in another boy’s place for no other reason than that he thought the noose was better suited to his neck” (43). As Bartle’s experience with war deepens, he comes to embody everything he hates in Sterling. He hates Sterling’s mindless commitment to war, but he needs it, and for a moment, so do we: “I needed him to jar me into action even when they were trying to kill me, how I felt like a coward until he screamed into my ear, ‘Shoot the hajji fucks!’” (19). Bartle explains, “[I]t wasn’t just the fact of his having been there that caused us to respect him. He was harsh, but fair, and there was a kind of evolutionary beauty in his competence” (33). Ambivalent throughout, Bartle struggles with his need to imitate what he both loves and hates, and, of course, so do we.
Sterling is exactly what his society demanded he be, and as such he is the origination of all ritual violence in this novel. Bartle describes Sterling from his prison cell:

I’m not sure he would have realized he was permitted to have his own desires and preferences . . . His life had been entirely contingent, like a body in orbit, only seen on account of the way it wobbles around its star. Everything he’d done had been a response to a preexisting expectation. (188)

And in this contingent role, he abuses a girl in a German brothel and murders the Iraqi “cartwright” who helps them move Murph’s body. He also burns down the minaret Murph was thrown from and kills an old couple in a car in the opening combat scene (221, 22). Bartle places no explicit moral judgments on these acts, but in making Sterling a bit of a maniac soldier with criminal tendencies, the audience can easily accept or even forget Bartle’s transgressions. We are tempted to accept, as Bartle reflects later, the idea that Sterling and Bartle are merely completing the order that society (or better yet, the reader) has set for them.

Thus created, there are a number of cathartic functions affected by Sterling’s suicide. In Violence and the Sacred (1977), René Girard’s concept of “mimetic desire” accounts for Bartle’s dilemma (143). He wants to imitate Sterling, but to do so, since he both despises and admires him, he must ritually eliminate and replace him. On their way home, the entire unit stops at a base near Kaiserslautern, German—this tale’s scene of purgatorial reckoning—and the two argue about their crimes and cover-ups in Iraq.

Sterling threatens: “Me and you. Like we’re married. I’ve fucking got you, Private Bartle. UC motherfucking MJ, anytime I want” (68). Bartle tepidly suggests that he can reveal
their secrets, but vengeance and justice-free punishment are unavailable in Powers’ scapegoating process. That would merely perpetuate the order that Burke encourages us to identify, track, and protect ourselves against. As Lawrence Coupe summarizes, “Mimetic desire would, if fulfilled, result in the collapse of the social order, with chronic aggression the norm” (136). Thus, we suspend our judgment and desire for retribution so Powers can complete the “killing off” of the poster-child Sterling. When we do reach the disturbing action of the final two chapters, we have no choice but to marvel at the crimes Bartle later describes. Or, as Bartle puts it, “Sterling never made it back to be accountable” (186). That is, he shot himself first. He held himself accountable (186).

Girard’s concept of the scapegoat is slightly different from Burke’s, but they both focus their philosophies on the scapegoat mechanism as the most important ritual in myth and language (Coupe 137-138). As Girard points out in Violence and the Sacred (1977), reprisal and vengeance have no place in that ritual:

The desire to commit an act of violence on those near us cannot be suppressed without a conflict; we must divert that impulse, therefore, toward a sacrificial victim, the creature we can strike down without fear of reprisal, since he lacks a champion. (13)

Bartle will ponder suicide, but Sterling succeeds. Had Sterling survived long enough to accept his own prison sentence alongside Bartle, or if Bartle had also purged his own guilt through self-killing, the novel would have fallen into disarray at the end. Burke describes the dialectic “rebirth” that can be symbolically captured in acts of self-killing in his cult of the kill:

When confronting the need for “dyings” and new “births” thus dialectically encouraged, men seem to prefer the simple suicide and
homicide of militarist devotion, having persuaded themselves that the further dialectical growth of doctrine would be immoral. (*Rhetoric* 263)

Bartle makes a half-hearted attempt to drown himself in the James River, and there he finds a sort of dialectical rebirthing. Instead of self-killing, he offers a confession in a long, two-page diatribe of purging questions, questions that many purveyors of violence face but very few bother trying to answer.

In this passage, Bartle begins with a desire “to be asleep forever” in order to atone for his crime (144), and he closes with the same impulse, of just wanting “to go to sleep and not wake up and fuck ’em all” (146). Slipping next into second person, he manipulates the second-person pronoun and its referents in a series of turns and shifts that move from accusation to commiseration and antagonism. He talks about “making up” for the men and women he has killed and seen killed and about his urge “to kill everything you saw sometimes because it felt like there was acid seeping down into your soul” (144). He connects his “mother’s pride” when he comes home with the way he and his rifle made “people crumple” (144). And he, of course, reminds us of his failed promise: “the one person you promised would live is dead” (144). Bartle admits to his crimes, though at this point we still don’t quite know what he is talking about: “everyone is so fucking happy to see you, the murderer, the fucking accomplice, the at-bare-minimum bearer of some fucking responsibility” (145). And then, in what is probably the most powerful passage of the novel, he talks about the inherent conflict between volunteer military service—O’Brien’s “acts of consent”—and its aftermath: “but then you signed up to go so it’s all your fault, really, because you went on purpose, so you are in the end
doubly fucked, so why not just find a spot and curl up and die” (145). Though this stream-of-consciousness rant can be ignored as an occasion for Bartle to shout at himself, a close look at it reveals his conflicted obsession with the contradictions, hypocrisies, and regrets of military service and the tacit obligations it requires. This confession reveals that, even though he has survived, an excruciating humanity remains that is not purged when Bartle slips into the water and tries to go to sleep forever. So we watch; we watch Bartle’s symbolic act of attempted self-killing, and we share his guilt and recognize his painful abandonment of his old self, the old self who “wanted to be a man” by joining the army (145). Bartle’s attempt to self-kill becomes our own; however, the incomplete submission—to the river and then to his prison sentence—merely postpones his death wish until Sterling can accept the role in Bartle’s stead.

Bartle is not even surprised when the news of Sterling’s self-killing finally arrives; indeed, he welcomes it. Before the investigator can finish saying the word, “accident,” Bartle closes his eyes and imagines the purgation, his ultimate cathartic release:

When I closed [my eyes] I saw Sergeant Sterling on the side of a mountain. Saw the rifle barrel in his mouth. Saw the way he went limp, so limp in that impossible moment when the small bullet emerged from his head. Saw his body slide a few feet down the mountain, the worn soles of his boots coming to rest in a clot of pine needles. (188)

Bartle imagines the bullet exiting Sterling’s brain and taking a portion of his guilt with it, but there is no eyewitness description of the carnage. The inspector doesn’t provide these details; thus, the purgation happens off stage and the purgative effects of the off-stage, self-inflicted violence is therefore deepened, not limited. Bartle and the reader must
imagine the actual moment of purging; there is no red-handed Medea rushing onto the stage after the deed is done. Thus, everyone’s redemption remains incomplete, and this is as it should be.

Bartle is rightly punished, but we never quite learn which action in particular has landed him in prison. Is it the accomplice role he played in the murder of the Cartwright? Is it the fake letter and the cover-up of the true nature of Murph’s death? Bartle has so thoroughly compartmentalized his wartime actions as being agency free that it doesn’t really matter. Bartle recognizes this nuance as well:

I knew the C.I.D. investigators would find me eventually, and I was pretty sure I knew what they wanted. Someone had to be punished for what happened to Murph. It probably wouldn’t matter what our level of culpability was. I was guilty of something, that much was certain. (179)

Again, when he says, “what happened to Murph,” he is talking about the one place he has been able to indentify his own agency: in his war promise, the letter, and the cover-up. The remaining guilt is a general byproduct of acting like Sterling who, of course, never “made it back to be accountable” (186). As Coupe writes, in the ritual of “mimetic violence,” the “arbitrary persecution of a victim becomes in the myth the just punishment of a crime” (137). Sterling is, for Bartle, a sort of arbitrary victim. Both men are guilty of crimes, but Sterling’s suicide fulfills both needs (Bartle’s purgation and our desire for just punishment for his slightly more heinous war crimes). His suicide and Bartle’s prison sentence therefore restore all demands for social order. A combat-scarred, mindless, killing machine, Sergeant Sterling is the sacred cow of this war and this war novel. It takes his death for Bartle (and us) to conclude: “I do feel ordinary again” (224).
That cycle, the one that allows the public to create a soldier, use a soldier as a tool of aggression, and then “feel ordinary” again after that soldier’s death is what Burke’s methodology reveals when it is applied to Powers’ novel. We should feel uncomfortable with Sterling’s existence and death, not necessarily because he committed suicide, but because he existed at all. This is one reason why many people have strong responses to Chris Kyle and Clint Eastwood’s cinematic adaptation of Kyle’s “autobiography,” *American Sniper*. In many ways, Kyle was a real life version of Sergeant Sterling. He was good at the job we asked him to do, and he definitely managed to “stay deviant in this motherfucker” (156). Kyle never broke any military laws or rules of engagement in Iraq—as far as we know—but like Sterling, his very existence became a symbolic carrier for a nation’s guilt, a guilt that perhaps should not be purged so easily. No matter the way one actually feels about Kyle’s portrayal in the film or the brutal reality of war he enacted through his service, when he was murdered on a Texas shooting range in 2013, he essentially provided a nation a vicarious purgation. Nothing about either catharsis—the one drawn from Sterling’s self-kill or the one drawn from Kyle’s murder—should make us feel comfortable about America’s relationship with war.

“Something happened”: the Scapegoating of Daniel Murphy

Bartle’s redemption allows the audience a parallel cathartic purging, but we participate voyeuristically, as curious observers who simply want to know why Bartle is in jail and why he hates Sterling so much. As for our full post-cathartic redemption, it
doesn’t arrive, as it must, until the second-to-last chapter (Chapter 10). Unlike Sterling’s death, so much depends on the specific events and vivid details of Murph’s self-killing. For us, Daniel “Murph” Murphy is an aesthetic object, and we never forget that he is imitating something. And despite how much we may discount his role as nothing but an authorial invention, Murph’s life and death pose many questions regarding our previously held beliefs and apprehensions about war. A modern day Billy Budd, not only does Murph’s death drive Bartle from scene to scene and haunt his every recollection of war, he also traps the audience within the novel’s rhetorical functions. In this way, Murph serves double duty as a scapegoat and a goad, an unstable cluster of motives that urge us to reexamine war, soldiers, and war blame.

The audience need not harbor a desire for Murph’s death, but Powers most certainly maintains our morbid curiosity about it throughout the novel. Murph’s death, as Burke describes Othello’s, “goaded (tortured) the plot forward step by step, for the audience’s villainous entertainments and filthy purgation” (“Othello” 170). If Sterling is the speaker of the “Yellow Bird Jody” and Bartle is alternately the speaker and the bird, Murph is never anything but the yellow bird until he realizes, too late, that he has been the speaker as well. And we are almost happy to see him go even though Murph’s peripeteia makes us all mourn his death, for the grief is, quite literally, the audience’s own. For the entire book, we knew it was coming; so when it does finally arrive, it satisfies our appetite for a payoff following Powers’ suspenseful form, but it does little to cleanse the order (American war culture) that results in Murph’s suicidal surrender.
Through Bartle’s narration, we see that he and Murph differ vastly in their attempts to “stay deviant.” Whereas Bartle survives long enough to be redeemed by Sterling’s self-kill and accept a measure of prison time for his crimes, Murph suffers a slow but definite descent into his inescapable humanity. Here is the closing paragraph of Bartle’s penultimate run-up to Murph’s scapegoating scene:

What happened? What fucking happened? That’s not even the question, I thought. How is that the question? How do you answer the unanswerable? To say what happened, the mere facts, the disposition of events in time, would come to seem like a kind of treachery. The dominoes of moments, lined up symmetrically, then tumbling backward against the hazy and unsure push of cause, showed only that a fall is every object’s destiny. It is not enough to say what happened. Everything happened. Everything fell.

What happens, in Murph’s case, is that he steps out from beneath the shade that Bartle’s super-agent war casts and accepts his own accountability and agency. And, in the end, he literally falls from the top of a minaret.

First, he misses the “unasked-for ceremony” that bestows “medals of gallantry and commendation” on the unit for their actions during the fight that opened the novel (153). We join Bartle in his hunch that Murph is avoiding him, but this doesn’t stop us from becoming increasingly concerned with Murph’s fate, for we can clearly see that he is unable to “stay deviant” (156). Bartle describes their behavior after following the opening battle scene, “We were unaware of even our own savagery now: the beatings and the kicked dogs, the searches and the sheer brutality of our presence. Each action was a page in an exercise book performed by rote” (159). Bartle claims to be unaware of his own savagery, but Murph does not so easily mitigate his own culpability. He fails to
sustain his part in the barbarity of war, and we are going to need him to pay for it. He begins by throwing away his “casualty card,” and then he tosses a picture of his girlfriend back home (159). He starts marking graffiti all over their base with the tag, “Murph was here” along with “two eyes and a nose peering over one thin line” (159). Dating to World War II, the “Kilroy was here” marker typically tracked a unit’s anonymous movement from one place to another. Or, as Paul Dickson suggests, “Kilroy was a mischievous outsider, staring at, and probably laughing at, the world” (182). Murph subverts that meaning; his graffiti marks the FOB as a place he will soon depart. This builds both the suspense and the appropriateness of his role as our scapegoat. This is no morale-boosting symbol of laughter or encouragement; rather, “Murph was here” darkly foreshadows his desertion, and his self-purging.

Bartle describes Murph’s departure into the “wilderness” of Al Tafar after a mortar round kills a female medic Murph had been watching for days:

Murph, gape-jawed and crying, was gone. He left after finding the medic’s body sprawled in a spot of sunlight that fell through a hole the mortar made in the broken chapel’s roof. He wasn’t at her ceremony . . . He’d already left through a hole in the wire by then, his clothes and disassembled weapon scattered in the dust. (193)

Thus, Murph makes a rather straightforward version of a modern, self-appointed biblical scapegoat from the book of Leviticus. From this vantage point, Murph’s death scene—at least partially—resembles the Mosaic ritual of the Day of Atonement in which a goat is ritually driven off into the wilderness in order to symbolically cleanse the rest of the community. Whereas the horns of the Judaic traditional scapegoat were wrapped in red cloth, Murph (the incompetent soldier) walks into Al Tafar, naked, an offering of public
atonement for the “sheer brutality” his society’s “presence” (159). Girard explains the ease with which it is possible to accept a secular symbolic scapegoat in place of a traditionally religious one:

> When we exclaim: “the victim is a scapegoat,” we resort to a biblical expression that no longer has the same significance as it had for the participants in the ritual of that name . . . Every explicit reference to the Passion has disappeared, but the Passion is always juxtaposed with representations of persecution from the perspective of the persecutors. The same model serves as a cipher for decoding, but it is so well assimilated that it is used mechanically without any explicit reference to its Judaic and Christian origins. (202)

This is how Murph’s death problematizes any easy redemption for the reader through the scapegoat mechanism. It dares the audience to question the necessity of his obligations in the first place and if it is truly possible to “stay deviant” and to survive unscathed. As Burke writes, “the so-called ‘desire to kill’ a certain person is much more properly analyzable as a desire to *transform the principle* which that person *represents*” (*Rhetoric* 13). Murph was not as deviant as Sterling; nor was he able to mitigate his own agency like Bartle. As Girard says of Oedipus, Murph is our perfect scapegoat because he “combin[ed] the marginality of the outsider with the marginality of the insider . . . the more signs of a victim an individual bears, the more likely he is to attract disaster” (25).

Still, the filthy purgation of this war story cannot be concluded until we learn the particularities of Murph’s death. Whereas war, as we are trained elsewhere in American war literature, is often localized into individual threats disposed of by one more pull of the trigger, in *The Yellow Birds*, the menace of war is generalized enough that the mirror of blame can only be turned inward. There is something in *The Yellow Birds* that we both
fear and hate. It isn’t the enemy; it isn’t the hero; it isn’t even Sergeant Sterling. It most certainly isn’t Daniel Murphy. It is war and the culture that builds a hierarchy and an order that asks men like Sterling and Bartle and Murphy to make such destructive acts of consent, to make war promises.

When we pick up the novel and allow Powers’ negotiation of form to pull us through the various stages of the scapegoating process, we implicate ourselves in that exchange. We are mournful when we find Murph’s dead body, but we are also relieved, nonetheless, to be given the partial redemption we so desperately need. As Bartle describes it,

We found Murph, finally, covered in a patch of lifeless hyacinth, resting motionless in the shade of the grass and low branches. . . . Laid up hard and broken-boned in the patch of vegetation that was his journey’s end, his body was twisted at absurd angles beneath the pink and shimmering tower. (205)

The sad reality is that Murph’s “fall” could, if it is not examined with the proper lens, fail to goad further action from the audience. As Bartle says, “the body had fallen, the boy already dead, the fall itself meant nothing” (205). Thus, the floating of Murph’s body down the Tigris River is quite appropriate. There is no place in this drama for a twenty-one-gun salute or a flag-draped coffin. If Murph is the carrier of the reader’s guilt, it is right that our shame be carried away in a secret, shameful manner. The Burkean pentad is complete: The Yellow Birds (agent) depicts the well-worn and expected soldier-fighting-an-enemy-and-himself structure (scene). This is a traditional convention of the genre, but Powers redirects the scapegoat ritual (act) through the deaths of Murph and Sterling with a masterful negotiation of what Burke called “psychology of form” (agency), all in order
to reassess the proper assignation of guilt from the Iraq war (*purpose*) onto the surviving perpetrators of war’s violence (Bartle *and* the reader).
Chapter Four: The Comic Corrective and Ben Fountain’s *Billy Lynn’s Long Halftime Walk*

Artists do not load power kegs—they light fuses . . . The artist is like the man who cried “Fire!” in a theater. The “brilliancy” of the fellow arose out of the fact that he shouted the word best adapted to “touching off” a stampede under these particular conditions. (Kenneth Burke, “Auscultation” 137)

In the fall of 2013, I attended a lecture delivered by Ben Fountain, the author of *Billy Lynn’s Long Halftime Walk* (2012) at the Air Force Academy in Colorado Springs.33

As he took the stage and began talking, Fountain seemed immensely pleased to be speaking to a large group of cadets and Air Force officers, and I was eager to hear what he had to say about his wildly popular book, one of the first extended fictional treatments of the Iraq war to be written by a civilian. His talk, though, had little to do with *Billy Lynn*; instead, Fountain focused on *Billy Lynn*’s underlying politics, something he described as the “Fantasy Industrial Complex.” His description of the concept sounded a lot like Kenneth Burke’s observation, in 1952, of the “motivational tangle that besets our nation, plaguing political leaders who would unite nationwide parties” (*Counter-_

33 This presentation took place on September 10, 2013, as part of the “Seventh Annual David L. Jannetta Distinguished Lecture in War, Literature and the Arts” at the U.S. Air Force Academy in Colorado Springs, CO. The speech appeared in *War, Literature, and the Arts* bearing the title “Soldiers on the Fault Line: War, Rhetoric, and Reality.”
Statement xiii). Indeed, in fascinatingly similar terms, Fountain’s “Fantasy Industry
Complex” covers much of the same entanglement in post-9/11 American culture.
Fountain’s words echoed much of what Burke had to say about cultural rhetoric as seen
through art’s symbol use and misuse. As Burke posits, “this tangle of motives also affects
the temper of even our artistic spokesmen who are not specifically concerned with such
problems” (Counter-Statement xiii). Fountain’s temper and cultural criticism is, to be
sure, entangled by the manipulation of public sentiment that he sees in nearly every
aspect of life in a post-9/11 United States.

Whereas Burke’s catalysts for his ideas regarding symbolic action were the
depression, two world wars, and the looming menace of nuclear war, Fountain’s “Fantasy
Industrial Complex” grew out of the trauma of 9/11 and the American responses to it—
responses of fear and anger manifested in the brute reality of two wars. The bubble
created by improper symbol use, Fountain says, is the controlling factor in American
motivations and reasoning, especially as far as war is concerned. As Fountain sees it,
there exists a corresponding bubble of symbol mongering in all aspects of popular
culture. And, like Burke, Fountain suggests that language and rhetoric at the macro level
have both caused—and can be potential saviors of—failures in the sociopolitical realms
of human existence. Whereas Burke decidedly defines man as the “symbol-using
(symbol-making, symbol-misusing) animal” (Language 16), Fountain conceives an
American culture that is entirely dominated by a virtually agent free simulacra of
“electronica, entertainment, and media” in the years following 9/11 (3). Much like Jean
Baudrillard’s compelling arguments that the first gulf war “did not take place”—or, rather, that war would be known and conceived primarily through its “rotten simulation” in representations in the media through advancing technology (59)—Fountain observes that “we often don’t know what’s real anymore” in any realm of American life (3). War is one more item in a long list of faked and simulated experiences that are mainly desired for titillating or entertaining purposes. Instead of genuine engagement, Fountain suggests, the product-driven version of reality we consume and demand is one based on “fantasy, triviality, and materialism” (3). Thus, the American soldier in the twenty-first century is just one more very effective prop—or synecdochic symbol—in the Fantasy Industry Complex’s vast arsenal. The soldier has become a manipulated sign carrier—stripped of agency—for all of our post-9/11 anxieties, and the Fantasy Industrial Complex uses him or her for vicarious reassurance that we still live in a sound and just society.

During his speech that evening in Colorado Springs, Fountain related this perspective to his novel, which he summarized by saying that it is “about football, cheerleaders, sex, death, war, capitalism, the transmigration of souls, brothers and sisters, parents and children, the movie industry, Destiny’s Child, and the general insanity of American life in the early years of the 21st century” (1). Yes, that is quite the list, and he’s not exaggerating. The novel presents all of these elements, which, taken as a whole, form the basis of his Fantasy Industrial Complex and confront the eponymous hero Billy Lynn. The resulting novel is a comical interrogation of the frustrating complexities Fountain has observed in America’s war culture since 9/11.
The plot of *Billy Lynn* follows a group of U.S. soldiers—“Bravo Squad”—who have been plucked from combat and draped in medals following a televised firefight in Iraq. This group of heroes is paraded across the country on a so-called “Victory Tour,” and they all revel in fame’s fleeting possibilities during this welcomed break from the fighting in Iraq. The novel picks up Bravo and Billy Lynn on the last day of this tour, a day spent in Texas Stadium, on Thanksgiving Day in 2004, as the guests of honor for a Dallas Cowboys football game and a halftime show with Beyoncé and Destiny’s Child. In luxury suites and VIP lounges, the conspicuously rich bathe in the glow that follows these fighting men around. They fawn and they praise, and as the soldiers float through this brush with adoration and money, they realize that the battle in Iraq that made them momentarily famous did nothing to prepare them for a slightly different battle in America.

Packaged and sold as heroes to a starving public, these soldiers are tepidly trying to “sell” their stories to Hollywood before they return to Iraq. But a movie “deal” for these soldiers is not to be. The rich and the powerful beckon and manipulate these lower and middle class citizen-soldiers, but in Fountain’s formulation, the collision of these two groups serves mainly to highlight their underlying difference, differences that determine each individual’s rather firm place amid the hierarchies and social strata of American society. Every American in this stadium shares much—Fountain seems to say—but not quite enough to ever achieve consubstantiality. There is something about this culture that prevents empathy, something that gets in the way of a healthy sharing of experiences.
across the borders drawn by capitalism and entertainment. The Fantasy Industrial Complex ensures that no true identification, no lasting merger, can ever happen between those who fight the wars and those who ask them to do so on their behalf.

The soldiers of Bravo squad enjoy the game and the fleeting fame, though. They mix with football players and football fans, but they are never quite invited to emerge from the cocoon of their small group. And as the movie deal they seek falls apart and their return to Iraq draws near, Billy Lynn and his sage leader, Sergeant Dime, slowly realize that fame, gratitude, and sacrifice are all necessarily hollow gestures. In the America to which these soldiers have returned, a place peopled by the insulated rich and the equally insulated drunken masses, these socioeconomically disadvantaged civilian-soldiers are desired as passive objects in a game of consumption. Iraq, then, is maybe the one place where these soldiers can truly become themselves, the only place where they can achieve unmitigated agency with their guns, their brotherhood, and their heroics. Thus, both places—Texas and Iraq—come across as locations we don’t really want to be, worlds that aren’t necessarily worth fighting for.

For all of these reasons, Fountain’s satire is ripe for Kenneth Burke’s guilt-purification-redemption methodology, for the novel is shaped and controlled by Fountain’s unmistakable “comic frame” and a scapegoat mechanism that closely follows Burke’s concept of vicarious victimage. The measured redemption that *Billy Lynn* affords is preceded by two types of “mortification”; that is, catharsis is available through the “homicidal” slaying of a scapegoat (Billy Lynn), and, as Burke writes, through the
scapegoat’s suicidal “mortification” of himself (RR 223). 34 Billy doesn’t die, but in the end, after the Cowboys lose the game, the fans go home, pleased with their patriotic exertions while the soldiers voluntarily—almost eagerly—return to Iraq. Or in terms of Burke’s scapegoat mechanism, the guilty public unburdens itself with “thank-you-for-your-service” platitudes and cathartic engagement with the video of Bravo squad’s firefight while, to a man, Bravo squad voluntarily returns to possible death in Iraq. And the rest of America is glad to see them go. Thus, the ritual of America’s war in Iraq continues, uninterrupted and unexamined. The war goes on, and culpability is left floating somewhere in the air above Texas Stadium, adhering to neither the soldiers nor the citizens.

Maintaining a Perspective by Incongruity: Fountain’s War on War Porn

A bit of that guilt sticks to us though, and this is why Burke’s methodology is particularly applicable to Fountain’s novel. In many ways, Fountain attempts to create a comic version of war’s consumption in popular culture through what Kenneth Burke calls a “perspective by incongruity” (Attitudes 308). The “comic corrective,” and the “comic frame,” Burke elaborates, are effective tools that build up this perspective by incongruity, 

34 In Language as Symbolic Action, Burke writes that the audience achieves “purification by sacrifice, by vicarious atonement, unburdening of guilt within by transference to chosen vessels without” (66). Likewise, self-punishment and self-denial absolve guilt “suicidally.” In The Rhetoric of Religion, Burke writes that “the modes of sacrifice” essentially “express themselves either ‘suicidally,’ as Mortification, or ‘homicidally,’ in the slaying of scapegoats more or less clearly identified with the traits of human personality” (223).
which is, as he defines it, “a method for gauging situations by verbal ‘atom cracking’” (*Attitudes* 308). Or, as Burke refined the term in a 1983 interview, a “perspective by incongruity is a way of seeing two ways at once. It’s the whole principle of an ironic approach to something” (“Counter-Gridlock” 350).35 Much like the economist Thorstein Veblen’s concept of “trained incapacity,” Burke says, a perspective by incongruity assesses a situation in terms that allow us to see through incompatible perspectives of a contextual situation in order to identify the “trained incapacity” in the dramatic scene’s agents (“Counter-Gridlock” 350).

The agents—the characters—of a novel like Fountain’s are not necessarily equipped to view all perspectives of their contextual situations at once, but we are. Billy Lynn, the fans, the rich: all of these agents are “trained” to remain “incapacitated” by their debilitating levels of awareness, awareness driven by limiting experiences, prejudices, and desires that in no way leave them “competent to look at a situation otherwise” (“Counter-Gridlock” 350). Billy and the other members of Bravo squad lack the cultural competence needed to view themselves as the rest of the world does, and the citizens at the football game lack the generosity required to fully empathize with Bravo. The dialectic blending of subject and object may not be available for the characters of *Billy Lynn*, but we, the novel’s auditors, are not so restrained. Since we are privy to some or all perspectives in the novel, we can construct a corresponding meta-perspective, one

---

35 This interview originally appeared in *All Area*, and it was republished in *On Human Nature* (2003). All citations come from the later publication.
that is built by the novel’s incongruent perspectives and motivations; we can track Fountain’s ironic juxtaposition of agents, acts, agency, and purpose in one massive scene. These elements, and Fountain’s “ways of placement,” help us understand “what people are doing and why they are doing it” (Grammar 3).

Burke uses Shakespeare’s plays to explain the benefits of a perspective by incongruity, but his words hold for Billy Lynn as well:

The audience, then, from its vantage point, sees the operation of errors that the characters of the play cannot see; thus seeing two angles at once, it is chastened by dramatic irony; it is admonished to remember that when intelligence means wisdom . . . it requires fear, resignation, the sense of limits, as an important ingredient. (Attitudes 42)

This is an important concept to keep in mind when we read Billy Lynn. The typical American citizen—rich, entertained, and intoxicated—is not competent at viewing war; he or she sees not the war, but the spectacle, the symbols of war only. A perspective by incongruity, then, allows a critic or a reader of Billy Lynn to see multiple perspectives at once, to see which dramatistic element—act, agent, agency, scene, or purpose—is emphasized over the others so that we can also identify the ruptures in the various narratives that these elements form when they come together.

Burke’s perspective by incongruity resists, as Debra Hawhee concludes, “the notion of one truth or one ‘right’ interpretation” (134). As Hawhee says, this allows a reader to instead “adopt different ‘slicing styles’—read, different perspectives—as mutually informing, and more importantly, as a conscious—and ever artificial—shaping”

36 These five elements—agents, acts, agency, purpose, and scene—make up Burke’s dramatistic pentad, first described in A Grammar of Motives.
(135). In these perspectives’ “incommensurability,” says Hawhee, the reader is best prepared with satire and with a comic frame “for the maximum Perspective by Incongruity” (135). This is why Burke would approve of Fountain’s novel, I think, for it uses irony and satire and mockery to highlight American symbol abuse by all of its citizens, and it does so with a relentless rewrite of one “slice,” one version of reality and enacted on Thanksgiving Day in Dallas, Texas in 2004. It brings together the many antithetical perspectives and motivations in a stadium full of Americans in order to highlight popular culture’s alienating but dominant power.

Fountain’s novel, therefore, offers us a complex perspective by incongruity by affording the reader the benefit of a “comic synthesis” of “antithetical emphases” that ultimately stress “man in society” (Attitudes 170). This is yet another reason why Burke’s forensic methodology is such a useful tool for war literature; it suggests that a synthesis of war and war’s agents can lead to understanding, not through a mere vicarious cathartic experience, but through an examination of a “comic frame” that “could not, and should not, offer recompense” for anyone (Attitudes 175). Instead of easy redemption, a comic frame like Fountain’s can lend itself to a work’s overall “comic corrective” function. Thus, we can transcend Fountain’s propagandistic purposes. The scapegoat mechanism can be revealed and problematized, and the reader can assume a “polemical-debunking frame” that works to balance other readings of war literature, readings that “have unintentionally blinded us to the full operation of ‘alienating processes’” (Attitudes 167).
As Burke sees it, comedy and tragedy share much in terms of their dramatic structures and the scapegoat mechanisms they both employ. He writes, “Like tragedy, comedy warns against the dangers of pride, but its emphasis shifts from crime to stupidity” (*Attitudes* 41). Analyzing *Billy Lynn* with Burke’s comic corrective in mind can allow us to distance ourselves from reinforced binaries, no matter how they are drawn. As Burke summarizes in *Attitudes Toward History*,

> The comic frame might give a man an attitude that increased his spiritual wealth, by making even bad books and trivial remarks legitimate objects of study. It might mitigate somewhat the difficulties in engineering a shift to new symbols of authority, as required by the new social relationships that the revolutions of historic environment have made necessary. It might provide important cues for the composition of one’s life, which demand accommodation to the structure of others’ lives. (173)

Since the comic corrective of Fountain’s satire allows us a varied perspective of the incongruities that confront Billy in war and at home, we are encouraged to favor healthy ambivalence over easy resolution. And, since comedy allows us to see men as “fools” instead of as “villains”—as Burke puts it—we can complete the “comic circle” of Fountain’s satire; we can see “that all people are exposed to situations in which they must act as fools” without excusing ourselves for the same foolish behavior (*Attitudes* 41). The heroic can be minimized alongside all other elements of the Fantasy Industrial Complex. It takes a Burkean analysis, however, in order for *Billy Lynn* to emerge as a comedy that offers war’s drama an appropriately shallow redemption, one that ends with a complicated and ironic re-coupling of Billy Lynn and his fellow soldiers with war, the only relationship that makes sense—twisted though it may be—in today’s Fantasy Industrial Complex.
My analysis reveals that Fountain’s work can contribute to Burke’s project of *ad bellum purificandum*, perhaps despite itself. At times, however, Fountain’s style prevents a full or maximum perspective by incongruity. The result is a loss of effectiveness and emotional resonance due to what I see as a somewhat frantic attempt to establish authenticity and authority on the topic of war in fiction written by a civilian. Or, to put it another way, Fountain often panders to the demands of combat gnosticism, stylistically and thematically. Interviewers often ask Fountain about any accounting he may have done to make up for, as David Lawrence puts it, any “experiential gaps” in the writing of his novel (96). Fountain’s response is understandable: “This is a serious question,” he says, “and one I’ve thought about a lot. Given that I’ve never been in the military, did I even have the right to attempt a book like this?” (96). He repeated that worry to Edan Lepucki: “I felt like I had to earn the right to write this book, and the only way I could do that was by working very hard to imagine myself into the soldier’s experience, and hopefully write it correctly” (n. pag.). This is why I contend that *Billy Lynn* often distracts from building a maximum “perspective by incongruity” in its satirical treatment of America’s military response to 9/11. “Correctly” writing an experience: there are very few topics of fiction that create such anxiety among its writers. Fountain even says that writing about war and the military involves a sacrosanct “right” that must be “earned.”

---

37 As I explained in chapter one, James Campbell coined the phrase “combat gnosticism” to describe the dominant ideology in the war literature genre that emphasizes personal combat experience as a source of wartime epistemology, “a construction that gives us war experience as a kind of gnosis, a secret knowledge which only an initiated elite knows” (204).
Meanwhile, there is hardly any other aspect of American life that avoids his eager and confident censure. His respectful concern for soldierly “correctness” and a deference to some sort of witness-based authenticity not only excuses the American military and the individual soldier from his satire, but it also results in a style that comes across as more anxious than real, a comic frame that is more contrived than corrective.

Still, because of Fountain’s wit, his comic rendering of dialogue, and his acerbic use of humor, the novel is distinctive and worth reading. Like The Yellow Birds, Billy Lynn was well received, and it was also a finalist for the 2012 National Book Award. It won the National Book Critics Circle award, and it is currently being adapted into a movie by Oscar award winning director, Ang Lee.\(^{38}\) Much of its success has to do with the overall conception of the novel itself. In an interview with The Huffington Post, Fountain explains the moment of inspiration that drove him to adopt what Burke would call his “propagandistic (didactic) strategy” (Attitudes 166):

> The initial impulse came from watching the halftime show of a Dallas Cowboys Thanksgiving Day game in the mid-2000s. The show was very much like the one I describe in the book, this surreal and patently insane—to me, anyway—mash-up of militarism, pop culture, American triumphalism and soft-core porn. At one point during the show the camera flashed on a group of soldiers who were marching along with everyone else down on the field, and they looked like actual combat soldiers. They were in desert camo, and looked lean and tan; my sense was that they’d been over there fighting in Iraq or Afghanistan. And I wondered what it would do to your head, to have been over there immersed in daily life-or-death situations, then you return to the U.S. and get plunked down in the

---

\(^{38}\) Ang Lee specializes in adapting literature to film, such as Life of Pi (2012), Sense and Sensibility (1996), Crouching Tiger, Hidden Dragon (2001), and Brokeback Mountain (2006).
middle of this very artificial situation. How, in other words, would you keep from going crazy? (Wayne)

And this is exactly the scene as it operates in the novel; Fountain inserts Billy Lynn and Bravo squad wholesale into that same Texas Stadium on that exact same Thanksgiving Day in 2004 (see fig. 5). In this way, *Billy Lynn’s* fan fiction conception merely changes the camera angle. This is a significant construction. It only takes a couple of seconds online to discover that the Bears and the Cowboys did indeed play on that day in 2004.\(^{39}\) A quick internet search is also all it takes to locate the very footage that Fountain describes above. So precisely located, it is very easy to accept the fictional Billy Lynn, his corresponding viewpoint, and the propagandistic message Fountain relates.

Fig. 5: Photo of Destiny’s Child on the stage during halftime of the Cowboys/Bears football game on November 25, 2004. Fountain leaves Destiny’s Child and the Prairie View A&M marching band right there, in the exact same positions. Source: *People.com.*

\(^{39}\) Though, in the novel, the Cowboys lose 31-7. In the actual game on November 25, 2004, the Cowboys lost 21-7. Fountain must have wanted an even more lopsided defeat for “America’s Team.”
As Burke writes:

Clearly, the author who “weights” his observations in this sense will both contribute to the reinforcing of the serviceable attitude and be rewarded for doing so. If our literate public, for instance, is filled with varying degrees of resentment toward the orthodox capitalist order, a poet unfriendly to this order will both exploit this resentment and reinforce it by the “weighting” of his observations with his particular “gravitational pull” in mind. (“Auscultation” 137)

Substitute “orthodox capitalist order” with “American war hawks after 9/11” and there you have *Billy Lynn’s Long Halftime Walk*. It is both a *roman à clef* and a work of historical fiction; Fountain capitalizes on the “gravitational pull” of the context surrounding an event that was viewed live by 11.3 million people across the nation on a Thanksgiving Day twenty months after the United States invaded Iraq. It will be interesting to see how Ang Lee manages to work all of this “reality” into his movie version of the novel. I can imagine it will be difficult (and expensive) to convince the Dallas Cowboy organization or the members of Destiny’s Child to approve the use of their trademarks in movie form. In the novel, Fountain isn’t hindered by such worries, and he puts this “real” scene and its easily recognizable celebrities to good use.

---

40 According to the NFL and “Nielsen” ratings, the average broadcast viewership of NFL games in 2004 was 9.8 million per game. For that specific game, the Fox network drew a rating of 29 for the game, a number that equates to 11.3 million “viewers” (“Final Nielsen”).

41 Lee’s movie is set to open on Veteran’s Day in November of 2016; the screenplay was written by Simon Beaufoy (Gettell). Lee reportedly transformed the Georgia Dome in Atlanta into the Dallas Cowboy’s AT&T Stadium for filming this last spring. Apparently the movie updates the setting from the novel’s 2004 timeframe when the Cowboys still played in Texas Stadium (Gettell).
This contextual grounding is both the novel’s crowning creative achievement and its greatest liability. Fountain would probably agree with Burke’s reminder that “literature must always have its ‘gravitational pull,’” that literature “must always be directed towards some worldly situation” (“Auscultation” 55). Fountain would also likely agree with Burke’s argument that all literature is propagandistic or political to a certain extent. As Fountain puts it in an interview with Edan Lepucki:

Everything is political, if we’re living among other human beings. Certainly everything in a society is political, right down to what we do in bed with other people . . . And war is perhaps the ultimate political sphere. Some presentations of the Iraq war—Hollywood movies, especially—have tried to be neutral, to simply present the soldiers’ experience on the ground without political commentary. Well, what you get then is a video game . . . Any realistic exploration of the war is going to have to include the political element; otherwise it’s just not worth the time. (n. pag.)

What Fountain seems to intend with this video game metaphor is, as I see it, that he wants to avoid falling into the pattern of the typical war story, one that is conceived from and designed to perpetuate the ideology of combat gnosticism. He disdains the idea that much art about war is designed to naturalize war, to provide vicarious experience, and while he definitely hopes to create a “realistic exploration of war,” he rejects the common artistic purpose of much of war literature that seeks to answer the clichéd question, “What was it like?”

While it is worth noting that many actual video games are overtly obvious with their political commentary, Fountain’s metaphor can still be well-taken, especially if we consider that he is likely referring to the mass market desire for first person presentations
of combat experience. He suggests something close to Roger Stahl’s argument in *Militainment, Inc.* (2010) that “video games are increasingly both the medium and the metaphor by which we understand war” (112). Therefore, the line Fountain is concerned with is the fine one that lies between “war porn”—a term popularized by Jean Baudrillard to describe the disturbing photos that American troops took of abused prisoners at Abu Ghraib—and reality-based representations of war. Indeed, Baudrillard’s description of the Abu Ghraib photos is important to keep in mind in our discussion of Fountain’s novel:

The degrading images of something that is the opposite of an event, a non-event of an obscene banality, the degradation, atrocious but banal, not only of the victims, but of the amateur scriptwriters of this parody of violence. The worst is that it all becomes a parody of violence, a parody of the war itself, pornography becoming the ultimate form of the abjection of war which is unable to be simply war, to be simply about killing, and instead turns itself into a grotesque infantile reality-show, in a desperate simulacrum of power. (n. pag.)

While Fountain keeps the soldier’s banal experience at the top of an epistemological hierarchy of the war (Billy’s firsthand knowledge of the battlefield is the one we are to assume as the most pure and unadulterated by the Fantasy Industrial Complex), Fountain most certainly eschews political neutrality as he seeks to highlight and criticize the public’s pornographic fascination with war.

---

42 Many video games trade on the well-worn desire to bring the soldier’s sensory experience of war to a game player. Thus, many take on a pro-war political situatedness; the extensive catalog of the *Call of Duty, Modern Warfare,* and *Medal of Honor* video game franchises are but a few examples. See Lydia Wilkes’ ‘‘Now Here’s What Really Happened’: The Rhetoric of Authentic Experience in War Memoir” for an interesting analysis of the popularity of first-person shooter video games that trade on the public’s desire for authenticity over empathy (179-180).
At one point in Fountain’s novel, a richly dressed and intricately manicured woman accosts Billy in a luxury VIP lounge so she can tell him about the night the video of Bravo squad’s famous firefight broke on the evening news:

I thought that [my husband] had lost his mind. I hear him screeeeeming in the media room and I ruuuussshhh downstairs to find him standing on my good George Fourth library table, in, my Gohd, his cow-boy boots, doing this Rocky thing. (193, emphasis original)

The husband, a man named March Hawey, listens along, nodding, and then simply adds: “It was cathartic,” he says (193). These are the type of people we are supposed to judge as fools, to consider with contempt. We are to judge them as horribly misguided and controlled by the spectacles they desire and consume with orgasmic gratification. Billy reluctantly sees them so as well, pausing in his narration long enough to pause on that word: “cathartic” (193). For Billy—and for us—March Hawey is a clown; he is little more than a “craggy-faced granddad,” a Texan who is “famous mainly for being rich and famous” with a “kindly rumpled sag of his narrow features” and an “elfin tweak of his eyes and ears” (192). This is the strength of Billy Lynn’s comic frame and the perspective by incongruity it invites. We can see how this man and his wife turn Billy’s war into one of Baudrillard’s “grotesque infantile reality-show[s],” but we are not encouraged to despise either one as a villain. They never become more than clownish fools following self-serving motivations.

Billy quickly notes this, and he notes that his televised war heroics provide little more than a “titillatory chill” for people like Hawey, his wife, and the growing group that forms around him during this pregame gathering (194). The recorded firefight includes
video of Billy running through a hail of gunfire to save a wounded friend—Hawey uses “John Wayne” as a verb to describe Billy’s action in the scene (193)—so the group pumps Billy for more information. The video, a visual documentation of experience, isn’t enough to tell them everything they need to know. They want what Billy has. They need to know how war feels. They need to know if Billy was scared. But like the video, Billy’s version of war offers nothing better to this hungry crowd, or, as he says, he gives them the easy out, “the payoff” (194). He thanks his training, and he makes a joke about not running out of ammo, and everyone explodes in an orgasmic release of laughter and a “vigorous round robin of socializing” (194). It takes much more than the “real” video or the “real” warrior’s firsthand combat testimony to replace experiential ignorance with knowledge and understanding. The setting, the mode of communication, the adulatory atmosphere: in Billy Lynn none of these contribute to an appropriate manner in which one can ask or answer questions about war, death, and state-sponsored violence. Clearly, as this scene displays, Billy is desired. He is needed, but just so civilian consumers can achieve a visceral, bodily response to their war, not Billy’s. They have all seen what he saw (via video), but the witness of war is irrelevant in the consumption. Well wishing patriots surround Billy and hang on his every word, but something is wrong, as he realizes, with the way he and his friends and the war are being paraded around and used pornographically. As Billy muses, the footage of Bravo’s firefight can be located online by searching for “Bravo snuff movie” or “America’s throbbing cock of justice” (288).
After Billy’s exchange with Hawey and his wife, he leaves, sullied by the experience:

In a way it’s so easy, all he has to do is say what they want to hear and they’re happy, they love him, everybody gets along. Sometimes he has to remind himself there’s no dishonor in it. He hasn’t told any lies, he doesn’t exaggerate, yet so often he comes away from these encounters with the sleazy, gamey aftertaste of having lied. (194)

This is the distance Fountain’s satire explores, the distance between the banality of the experience and the banality of its consumption. And apparently, this is an extremely difficult thing to manage in “realist” or “naturalist” styled works of war fiction. Or, as Burke qualifies satire like Fountain’s, in an attempt to maintain a resolute fidelity to actuality, such works can come across as “sadism if you write it, masochism if you like to read it” (Philosophy 128). Not surprisingly, the cut-and-paste narrative framing of the novel is why there exists an especially specific disclaimer on Billy Lynn’s copyright page, a note that somewhat loudly insists on the work’s fictive qualities. The full disclaimer reads:

This book is a work of pure fiction. References to real people, events, establishments, organizations, or locales are intended only to provide a sense of authenticity, and are used fictitiously. All other characters, and all incidents and dialogue, are drawn from the author’s imagination and are not to be construed as real.

Fountain wisely changes the names of the players, the coaches, and—of course—the owner of the Cowboys (“Jerry Jones” is swapped out for “Norm Oglesby”). Yet, three words stand out in that disclaimer: “authenticity,” “imagination,” and “real.”

43 Steve Martin plays the role of “Norm Oglesby” in the movie version of the novel.
Regardless of its legal imperatives, the disclaimer points at something in the novel’s conception and the mechanisms Fountain uses to create what he describes as a “realistic exploration of war” (Lepucki). Namely, it displays a definite anxiety about authority that exists in this novel as it walks the line between its satirical message and the contextual reality in which it was formed.

*Preventing a Perspective by Incongruity*

In *The Philosophy of Literary Form*, Burke writes:

> In studying the full nature of a symbolic act you are entitled, if the material is available, to disclose also the things that the act is doing for the poet and no one else. Such private goads stimulate the artist, yet we may respond to imagery of guilt from totally different private goads of our own. We do not have to be drug addicts to respond to the guilt of a drug addict. The addiction is private, the guilt public. It is in such ways that the private and public areas of a symbolic act at once overlap and diverge. (25)

And this brings me back to that night in Colorado Springs. Overall, Fountain’s words that evening were quite compelling, and he made it very clear that his overall goal with *Billy Lynn* was to transform his social criticism into art. Or, to put it another way, he wanted to share his anger with his reader. I was impressed with the bold expression of his own convictions, especially considering the location and his audience. Furthermore, I found myself agreeing with much of his argument, and as I’ve shown, I am still intrigued by the ways his philosophy overlaps Burke’s. Despite the novel’s popular reception and its “afternoon-on-the-couch” popular culture references—indeed, maybe *because* of its dominating scene—*Billy Lynn* remains puzzling as far as some of Fountain’s stylistic
choices are concerned. When I go back and look again at the tone and linguistic techniques at work in his novel, I sometimes fail to make his “symbolic act” “overlap” or “diverge” with my own “private goads.” I tend to agree with his argument that some war literature that lacks any overt political commentary can be repetitive, that it can feel like a waste of time, or that it can feel thematically and emotionally hollow, like playing a video game or watching pornography. *The Hurt Locker* (2009), for one, has been criticized—and praised—along these lines, and the combat memoir boom of the last decade has produced scores of books that operate in a similar manner. However, making one’s political commentary too explicit can have the same effect.

Back in that lecture hall, after Fountain spoke, I stood in line for his signature. I intended to ask about his chosen comic frame and the level at which we should read the novel as satire or straightforward realism. However, when I reached the front, there was no time to ask any more questions. I said something trite, and he said something polite, and I went home, disappointed even further. When I got home and looked at the inscription Fountain left on my book’s jacket, though, I was immediately convinced that my concerns were worthy ones, concerns that demand I return to them in the current study. *Billy Lynn* demands close examination, not because the novel’s comic frame

---

44 As David Edelstein comments, Kathryn Bigelow, the director of *The Hurt Locker* and *Zero Dark Thirty*, “For her part, Bigelow has never been a filmmaker with a strong moral point of view” (n. pag.). Much of the debate over Clint Eastwood’s cinematic adaptation of Chris Kyle’s “autobiography,” *American Sniper* revolves around its status as war porn. See Peter Van Buren’s piece for a rather engaging argument about war porn’s inherent pro-war propagandistic message and this controversial movie.
carries an indiscernible message or because it voices an otherwise unheard critical perspective. It demands this deep look because it reflects the very problems that plague the genre of war fiction: an overblown concern with authenticity and the guiding principle of seeming “real” while it enacts a fairly straightforward Burkean scapegoat mechanism.

The inscription reads: “For Dave Buchanan. Thanks for reading Billy Lynn. I hope I got it right” (see fig. 6).

Fig. 6: Fountain’s inscription. Courtesy author’s collection.
Superficially, “I hope I got it right” can be read as a simple, innocuous goal, and it is most certainly wonderfully vague. It seems to voice a significant heart-felt sentiment, but at the same time it could also be a meaningless scribble. Indeed, Fountain probably wrote the same thing a dozen times that night, especially considering that his audience was made up of people all wearing Air Force uniforms. I know his inscription was well intended, but “it” could refer to anything, as could “right.” Antecedents notwithstanding, I detect there an underlying anxiety below the words of his inscription, and it is urgent that I examine the attempted comic corrective of the novel and its symbolic structures accordingly. Fountain may bemoan the recycled story of the “the soldiers’ experience on the ground without political commentary,” but out of an abundance of deference to that experience, his political commentary slightly misses its mark.

Though the novel has been reviewed dozens of times in print and online, there seems to be little agreement on how one should generically align Billy Lynn’s Long Halftime Walk. On the cover, Karl Marlantes (author of Matterhorn: A Novel of the Vietnam War [2010] and What it is Like to Go to War [2011]), calls it “the Catch-22 of the Iraq War.”45 This clever blurb is not particularly illuminating, but a number of critics grab it and use it to situate their own reviews of the novel. David Lawrence, for one,

45 It bears noting that when Billy’s sister Kathryn tries to get him to go AWOL (Absent Without Leave) instead of going back to Iraq, the two discuss the “catch-22” of wartime service as Heller formulated it. When Billy rejects her offer to help him, Kathryn says, “only a nut would want to go back to the war. We’ll have the lawyers plead temporary sanity for you, how about that? You’re too sane to go back to the war. . . It’s the rest of the country that’s nuts for wanting to send him back” (254).
suggests that *Billy Lynn* is not satire because *Billy Lynn* differs from Heller’s work as far as the target of critique is concerned (90). Heller’s target, Lawrence says, was the bureaucracy of war, whereas Fountain’s is contemporary American society. Lawrence is right of course, at least partially, but the distinction he marks between the two works doesn’t necessarily mean Fountain’s work is best read as un-satirical realism. Just because their targets are different does not mean the authors use radically different satirical techniques.

Khaled Hosseini, the author of *The Kite Runner* (2004), agrees with Lawrence, but he doesn’t completely discard the label of “satire” as it applies to *Billy Lynn*. In an interview about the novel that Hosseini did for *The Wall Street Journal*, he says, “I feel like it’s a book that’s grounded in reality, with scraps of satire, whereas *Catch-22* was satire, with scraps of reality” (Alter). Matt Gallagher, in his *Daily Beast* review, writes—essentially—the same thing: “No, *Billy Lynn* isn’t satire topped with sprinkles of realism. It’s the exact opposite” (n. pag.). Carolyn Kellogg, comes down—reasonably—on the other side. In her *Los Angeles Times* review, she points out that “Fountain’s novel is not a work of realism; it’s an über-story, defined by irony and metaphor” (n. pag.).

One might suggest that all of these critics are really saying the same thing, that *Billy Lynn* conveys its propagandistic message with a blending of satire and realism. And in that sense, they would all be right. Both satire and realism ask us to suspend our disbelief and accept the constructed world of the text instead. And both satire and realism insist that, in that suspension, a lasting rhetorical goad can invade a reader’s psyche.
Given that there is a vast difference between “realism,” the literary style, and the objective fact of “reality,” satire can absolutely “seem” as real or even more so than a work of realism. This is a difficult balance to maintain, as Burke reminds us in his essay “Realisms, Occidental Style” (1982): “Though the realism of literature does give us the feel of reality, as nonliterary documents cannot, it can provide no assurance that the verisimilitude of a fiction is the same as the truth” (47).

But what is this novel? Since Billy Lynn is most notable for this unique pop-culture conception and critique (unique, at least, as far as war fiction is concerned), ridicule seems to be its defining trait. Like Bartle in The Yellow Birds, the hero Billy Lynn is haunted by the death of a close friend in combat. Yet, it is most certainly not a tragedy or an accounting of the human cost of war, though there are tragic elements shot throughout the narrative. It isn’t a chronicle of a battle or the redemption of a disillusioned soldier or the examination of one fighting man’s conscience, though all of that happens at varying degrees during the narration. As I discuss above, Billy Lynn attempts to re-direct our gaze as we re-observe various spectacles: a televised football game, a televised halftime show, and a televised firefight. Everything in the book has its cheerleaders: the NFL, Beyoncé, war. Yet, the difference between these agents and their auditors is only a matter of degree. The implication of that commonality, as Fountain establishes it, is that spectacles, not reality, exert the ultimate control in any attempt we may make to understand our post 9/11 world. Thus, Fountain resorts to a ratcheted-up,
“real” replication of Thanksgiving Day in 2004, and satire becomes the crutch on which he leans all of his propaganda.

There are problems, however, and it can best be described with Burke’s concept of “proportion”:

There is thus a sense in which formalist considerations might properly figure, even when one’s interests are wholly concerned with the interpretation of texts as social documents. It is a point that will turn up whenever the demands of artistic effectiveness do not coincide with the demands of strictly literal factuality. (“Realism” 47)

I contend that if we do not account for the anxiety of authenticity that drives the narrative, then the novel falls far from its mark and prevents a full perspective by incongruity. Consider three of Fountain’s chapter titles: “Dry-Humping for the Lord,” (139), “Jamie Lee Curtis Made a Shitty Movie” (155), “Raped by Angels” (226).

Fountain’s themes are serious, but his tone is sarcastic and irreverent. Considering that war literature is often dominated by pious, triumphant tales of combat that are usually received as hagiographic representations of soldiers at war; Fountain’s approach is fresh and different. And, by labeling his chapters as he does, Fountain loudly announces his “terministic screens,” screens that Burke would identify as clear indications of Fountain’s “comic frame.” As Burke describes,

The important distinction between comedy and humor, that is disclosed when we approach art forms as “frames of acceptance,” as “strategies” for living. Humor is the opposite of the heroic. The heroic promotes acceptance of magnification, making the hero’s character as great as the situation he confronts, and fortifying the non-heroic individual vicariously, by identification with the hero; but humor reverses the process: it takes up the slack between the momentousness of the situation and the feebleness of those in the situation by dwarfin the situation. It converts downwards, as the heroic converts upward. (Attitudes 53-54)
Indeed, Fountain’s treatment of the many “actual” references in his novel takes us behind the scenes of a carefully controlled performance (a televised football game) and a chaotic one (a televised firefight). Billy Lynn is the hero of both situations. He is our witty narrator, and he is the public’s silver-star-wearing protagonist of a battle caught on tape. So intertwined, humor “takes up the slack” between the two situations. Billy confronts both, and his character is adequately “great” in the face of both violence and entertainment, so the reader is allowed a vicarious identification with Billy’s greatness, as are the many people he meets in Texas Stadium.

Billy provides a cathartic purging for every person he encounters in that he is both the hero and the scapegoat at the same time. Billy is almost happy to accept the role of the martyr. Of course, as Burke reminds us, “martyr” is the Greek word for “witness” (“Variations” 178). So, at first, Billy is the heroic agent through which the American public can enjoy a vivid, near-first-person vicarious purging for a war that was, at the time of the novel’s publication, becoming increasingly unpopular. He bears witness to war, but since the public has the video of his heroics, they no longer need him for vicarious reassurance. As Billy describes the people in his hometown:

Nice people but they did go on, and so fierce about the war! They were transformed at such moments, talking about war—their eyes bugged out, their necks bulged, their voices grew husky with bloodlust. Billy wondered about them then, the piratical appetites in these good Christian folk. (86-87)

Billy is comforted with the idea that he is their martyr, but their bodily responses to his presence baffles him; sometimes, the citizens he meets are such big “fans of Bravo,” they “break wind, so propulsive is their stress” (37). However, these tiny cathartic purges—the
farts, the bulging veins, the voiced exclamations—are not enough to assuage the public’s need for Billy to return to Iraq so that he can vicariously carry all the filth and guilty admiration he collects during his Victory Tour. Thus, satire allows Fountain’s comedy to “convert” the hero scapegoating process “downwards” as he completes Billy’s full scapegoating.

It is in this conversion that the novel somewhat falls apart. *Billy Lynn* is humorous, as it is intended to be. We are supposed to laugh, as many critics admit they did when they first read the novel. Yet, its satire is almost completely undisguised. Fountain always makes it clear what we should mock, or—at a minimum—his narrative capitalizes on how eagerly we will mock that with which we are most familiar. As Burke describes his “comic frame,” conceptually, it can make “man the student of himself” (*Attitudes* 171). This is an important facet, if not the most important facet, of Fountain’s novel. Fountain’s blending of the real and the satirical does not always ask the reader to do much self-reflection, to examine all perspectives of the scene and its agents with the same suspicion.

*Billy Lynn* seeks to be “real” but staged at the same time. However, like Destiny Child’s halftime show, it too is a spectacle. Since it is also part of the Fantasy Industrial Complex, we must accept it in its own terms if it is to resonate or convince us at all, but the novel’s style might make this difficult for some readers. Delivered in a rushed colloquial language, much of Fountain’s plot relies on an uncomplicated mockery of easy targets (rich Texans, happy and intoxicated citizens quick with “thank you for your
service” platitudes, NFL football players). Replete with hyperbolic archetypes and experimental renderings of font and text, the storyline, at times, nears the absurd. In the end, Fountain’s comic frame and the popularity of his “context of situation” (again, millions watched that game and halftime show) might be all that prevents Fountain’s novel from sliding—just barely—into a ribald rant of moral indignation.

It is important to remember here that comedy (for Burke and for the purposes of this chapter) has very little to do with mere humor. The term, as Burke uses it, includes satire and burlesque and various concepts of the grotesque. Or, as Celeste Condit notes, Burke’s “comedic” is not synonymous with “the humorous” (“Post-Burke” 355). Rather, Condit says, “humor asks us to laugh against something, whereas comedy asks us to laugh knowingly and sympathetically with something” (“Post-Burke” 355). This is, at times, a difficult feat to achieve in literature that carries a loud propagandistic message.

Of his concept of the comic corrective, Burke writes:

> A frame becomes deceptive when it provides too great plausibility for the writer who would condemn symptoms without being able to gauge the causal pressure behind the symptoms . . . The progress of human enlightenment can go no further than in picturing people not as vicious, but as mistaken. (Attitudes 41)

These are distinctions that Fountain doesn’t bother attending to at times. With irony and exaggeration and mimicry, Fountain suggests that we have to laugh at the dealmakers of Hollywood, the massively wealthy, and the famous. As we saw above with March Hawey and his crew, these are the mistaken fools of America. However, Fountain’s satire sometimes devolves into vicious ridicule instead of self-reflective dialectic comedy.
Take, for instance, Fountain’s picture of Norm Oglesby, née Jerry Jones, the owner of the Dallas Cowboys:

He stands an inch or so taller than Billy, a fit, stout-necked sixty-five-year-old with peach-tinted hair and a trapezoidal head, wide at the bottom, then narrowing through the temples to the ironed-down plateau of hair on top. His eyes are a ghostly cold-fission blue, but it’s the proving ground of his face that awes and fascinates, the famously nipped, tucked, tweaked, jacked, exfoliated mug that for years has been a staple of state and local news. (111-112)

Fountain presents most of the Americans in this massive yet crowded stadium in a similar manner. He populates the world of Texas Stadium so that the reader can never stop marveling at the scores of characters alternatively blinded by money, sex, drugs, desire, and fame. Here is Norm’s wife:

Mrs. Norm, a well-maintained lady of a certain age with a puffed-out cloud of dark hair. She’s pretty. Her dark violet eyes don’t quite focus. She smiles but it’s purely social, gives nothing of herself, and Billy decides she’s either medicated or ruthlessly conserving energy. (112)

And here is Billy’s father, a former rock-and-roll radio disc jockey who suffered a stroke and now spends his days mutely fixed in a wheelchair, glued to FOX News:

He’d leaped straight from rock ’n’ roll to hard-core right wing with no stops in between. It was a remarkable feat of self-actualization, but at what cost, what stresses of body and soul, a blending of the psyche beyond human limits such as might be endured on a space voyage to Mars. The man existed in a 24/7 paranoid clench. He had TV and radio for intellectual affirmation, a two-packs-a-day habit for sensual sustenance, and none of the mundane distractions of fresh air or exercise. (77)

Are we to see these people as vicious or mistaken? It is difficult to say. Still, the answer may be in the satirical distance from the contextual situation that the reader is able to assume.
The first chapter carries the title, “The Thing Begins.” Which propagandistic production is “the thing”? In all likelihood, “the thing” is a reference to the spectacle that will follow, the spectacle of this “Fantasy Industrial Complex” and Bravo squad’s commodification therein. If the novel strikes a reader as primarily satirical or bordering on the absurd, “the thing” could be the text itself. When we watch a football game or go to a concert, we know we are getting a carefully mediated and controlled performance, but is there any difference in our reception of a videoed battle during war or a novel about that video? That is the satirical distance that this novel brings into question and its various critics accept or discard at varying degrees. The emotional evocation of Billy Lynn depends on whether or not we recognize each performance as equal spectacles.

This is what Burke means when he writes that “the intensity of a book’s appeal is always based upon the reader’s disposition to ‘meet the author halfway’” (“Auscultation” 137). Fountain can only inspire a sympathetic laugh if the reader is able to see the characters as unaware clowns rather than vicious enemies. This is also the only way Billy and the other soldiers can serve as this novel’s convenient motive-revealing scapegoats. Fountain’s comic frame, as Burke says, seeks to allow “people to be observers of themselves, while acting” (Attitudes 171). Billy Lynn is that study, though its comic frame does approach viciousness at times. That is, Fountain’s style may ask too much of us as we try to “meet him halfway.” Of satire and comedy, Burke says, “Its ultimate would not be passiveness, but maximum consciousness. One would ‘transcend’ himself by noting his own foibles. He would provide a rationale for locating the irrational and the
nonrational” (*Attitudes* 171). Fountain does very little noting of his own foibles, and his contextual situation somewhat thwarts the reader’s impulse to note his or her own foibles as well. As Burke mentions in his essay “On Catharsis, On Resolution,” Aristotle refers to excessive wit as “educated hubris” (349). Fountain’s wit is often excessive as he asks “us” to laugh at “them” (the filthy rich, the numbly drunk, the overpaid athlete). The challenge for the reader is to not make the same mistake.

*Caving under the Pressure of Getting it Right*

Fountain’s chosen mode of representation—irreverent comedy and unsubtle satire—results in a book with a gravitational pull toward a propagandistic message that simply cannot be missed or misunderstood. This isn’t necessarily an ill-conceived mechanism, but it can be terribly distracting. In an episode of “Good Reads” that aired on BBC’s Radio4, the well-known Cambridge classicist scholar, Mary Beard, cleverly borrows Billy’s description of back-slapping well-wishers as “overcaffeinated”; she describes *Billy Lynn* as suffering from an “in your face, overcaffeinated style of writing. There is hardly a noun that doesn’t get an adjective” (n. pag.). Beard admits to an enjoyable reading experience with the novel, and she says she will still recommend it to others. However, she says, Fountain “maybe could have been more effective if he would have just calmed down” (n. pag.). The “effectiveness” of Fountain’s “overcaffeinated style” is what I will trace in this section, a style I locate within Fountain’s concern to “get it right.”
As Burke posits in “Why Satire? And a Project for Writing One,” satire like Fountain’s, intended or not, operates as a “possibility of a compromise” (315). Satire, Burke says, is such a limited “offspring” of a historical situation, that it remains balanced between burlesque and successful rhetoric: “satire is universal, but burlesque is factional” (318). Satire, according to Burke, also “enables us to contemplate a situation to which we might otherwise close our minds, by self-deception, or by dissipation” (321). In order to understand the propaganda of *Billy Lynn*, it does matter the extent to which *Billy Lynn* succeeds in creating satirical spectacle as opposed to replicating a definite sense of the real. It matters where one draws the line of absurdity, especially considering that the very football game Fountain replicates in his novel inspired him.

The narrator is a third person omniscient voice, but it is also intended to be a witty and energetic stand-in for Billy Lynn’s inner monologue, a limited but knowledgeable speaker whose voice comes across as a mix of Fountain’s mature cynicism with a teenager’s diction. For instance, in the very first paragraph Billy reflects about a hotel lobby full of “overcaffeinated tag teams of grateful citizens” who “trampolined right down the middle of his hangover” (1). This voice may play well in a movie since it can be eliminated without risking damage to the emotional core of the narrative, but in the novel, this language is difficult.

For an example of *Billy Lynn*’s narrative blending of real-seeming teenage language of its hero with the witty and mature observation of its author, one need not go any further than the opening scene when Billy settles in for a limousine ride to Texas
stadium. Billy looks out the window, and his thoughts return to Bravo squad’s departure from Iraq in an Air Force C-130 two weeks earlier; Fountain pounces on the opportunity to display his propagandistic message in fairly obvious—and far-fetched—terms. As Billy remembers it, “twenty or so civilians of various shades and accents . . . joined them for the ride” (4). These foreign men, it turns out, were gourmet chefs from all across Europe who had been shipped into Baghdad for some unknown function. “The coalition,” Billy muses with a sigh, and then he remembers how these men began “partying hard” with “good whiskey, music blasting from a dozen boom boxes, a forest of Cuban cigars set ablaze” (4). One of these chefs, a “Swede,” shows Billy a “calfskin attaché case” chock full of a “gold stash,” a mass of “several pounds’ worth of chains and ropes and coin, of such purity that they glowed more orange than gold” (5). As Billy remembers it, “the fuselage quickly filled with a witches’ brew of smoke” (4), and Fountain—unsubtle to a fault—allows Billy a number of thoughts that belie a rather amazing astuteness for such a character. Of the chef’s bag of gold, Billy reflects: “He was nineteen years old and had no idea that his war contained such things, and what a damn shame for him and the rest of Bravo that it has not been won in the two weeks since” (5). Of the throngs of eager hand-shakers Billy and Bravo squad have endured for days, Billy concludes,

Desperation’s just part of being human, so when relief comes in whatever form, as knights in shining armor, say, or digitized eagles swooping down on the flaming slopes of Mordor, or the U.S. cavalry charging out of yonder blue, that’s a powerful trigger in the human psyche. Validation, redemption, life snatched from the jaws of death, all powerful stuff. Powerful. (6)
This is the novel’s satirical voice and the one that drives home Fountain’s political message throughout the novel. It delivers a stream-of-consciousness, of sorts, one that blends adolescent slang with an adult’s humorous commentary. One may argue that such a voice captures the way such a young soldier might actually talk and think, but such a choice is a costly indulgence, especially since it is how Fountain delivers much of his political message. His propaganda comes across brutally, like the punchline of a joke.

The speaker in these opening pages, and everywhere else in the novel, is this Billy-but-not-Billy persona. Fountain explains this technique:

A lot of these pronouncements about America simply came from trying to put myself in his skin, and seeing as he sees things. And maybe Billy, as a poorly educated, relatively unsophisticated 19-year-old kid from a small town in Texas, isn’t having these thoughts per se, not in so many words, but the narrative voice is conveying the substance of what Billy is thinking and feeling. If we could sit Billy down at any one moment and have him articulate precisely what he was experiencing—walking him through the experience, patiently, taking as much time as was needed—this, or something much like it, is what we’d end up with. (Lepucki)

The issue here isn’t whether or not a nineteen-year-old combat experienced soldier who recently began reading books actually thinks in the same language of the passages, nor is the issue whether or not Billy’s cerebral experience of reality is a worthy instrument by which Fountain can access Billy’s day. The issue, and its effect on Fountain’s satire, is that many may find it difficult to form a perspective by incongruity as they slog through Billy’s “precise articulation of his experience.”

Of Mark Twain’s satire, Burke writes that “before setting pen to paper, [he] again and again transformed the bitterness that he wanted to utter into the humor that he could evoke” (Counter-Statement 53). The purpose of art and satire, as Burke sees it, is to
evoke emotional responses in one’s reader; it is not merely an opportunistic mouthpiece for a satirist’s cynicism or frustration. As Burke writes, “the self-expression of the artist, qua artist, is not distinguished by the uttering of emotion, but by the evocation of emotion” (Counter-Statement 53). Thus, one can recognize Jim and Pudd’nhead Wilson and Huck Finn and Tom Sawyer even today. Fountain does not restrain his bitterness at all. He explains in an interview for National Public Radio:

And when the initial impulse for the book came to me, it came to me with the notion of it needed to sound a certain way. There’s got to be a certain kind of rhythm or speed to it. And it seemed, you know, from the very start, the correct rhythm, the correct sound for this book was going to be a headlong, you know, reckless, full-bore kind of rhythm to it. And I wanted to try to capture the intense experience that Billy and the other Bravos are having. I mean, this very vivid, almost overwhelming sensory experience—I wanted to try to capture that in the language—not just the images that the language is evoking but in the sound of the language itself. I didn’t want to give the reader a rest. (Sullivan)

Some readers need a rest though. “Vivid,” “sensory,” “reckless”: these motives determine every word of the novel, and they drove Peter Molin, in his blog about war and art to describe them as the “hopped-up razzmatazz style of Tom Wolfe, with lots of over-the-top figures of speech and nonstandard ways of arranging text on the printed page to represent speech and sound” (n. pag.). In the end, however, many of Fountain’s choices highlight the novel’s artifice rather than disguising it or displaying the “intense experience” of its characters. The result is what Burke identifies as an outdated tool of rhetoric, one that deploys invective and blame as artistic resources; such “stylistics of vituperation,” Burke says, have limited effectiveness in modern “aesthetic satire” (“Dramatism” 328).
Perhaps Fountain’s concern with “getting it right” refers to his preparation of a novel easily adaptable into a movie script; perhaps he has no worry that his language will cause his novel to wither as lasting satire. After all, he already has his own movie deal, something Billy Lynn and Bravo squad never get from their dealings with Norm Oglesby, who makes them a paltry, insulting offer toward the end of the novel (270). “Stylization is inevitable,” Burke reminds us, and as Fountain ratchets-up the realism under the burden of seeming “real” and “authentic,” he overcompensates to the point that his war novel can easily be read as accidental burlesque or dismissed as contextually-limited satire (*Philosophy* 128).

Fountain utilizes a number of mechanisms that can seem hyper-realistic, hyper-satirical, hyperbolic, or right on target, depending only on the resonance of the language and the transcendence of the novel’s symbols. In Burke’s estimation, “‘pure’ literature, as distinguished from ‘propaganda’ literature, would simply be literature ‘weighted’ as regards broader or less burning issues (preferring perhaps those issues which burn with the ‘hard, gemlike flame’)” (“Auscultation” 137). Beyoncé, a professional football game, Thanksgiving Day, Texas, sexy cheerleaders: all of these are effective symbols that could allow *Billy Lynn* a certain lessening of its propagandistic “weight.” Yet, war, 9/11, corruption, the decision to invade Iraq, ambiguities like freedom and patriotism: these burning issues “weight” *Billy Lynn* so that it falls closer to the extreme of utterance that is propaganda. Its ability to gravitationally pull us depends on the resonance of *Billy Lynn’s* voice and the ease by which a reader can draw any feeling of strategic ambiguity from its
satire. After all, Burke says, “the satirist attacks in others the weaknesses and temptations that are really within himself” (“Why Satire?” 317).

Fountain rightly notices that there are fascinating rhythms and spoken accents in the language of a super-patriotic Texas, the tones of a hermetically sealed military, and the everyday speech patterns of a group of combat-hardened adolescents. In order to capture the “sound of the language itself” as it might be related by a teenager who barely graduated from high school, Fountain uses countless colloquialisms and slang expressions. For example, Hollywood is referred to as “Ho-wood” (7), and Billy describes being hung-over and drunk at the same time as a “kind of sickly-sweet emo-funk” (11). One might argue that this is how young people talk and think today, that such terministic screens capture the language of a younger generation. For instance, the slang term “Dawg” appears sixteen different times throughout the novel, and it isn’t always part of dialogue; Billy addresses an invisible “Dawg” in his thought processes too. The same is true for the word “Yo” (meaning something close to “hey”). “Yo” appears nineteen times in the novel, and, like “Dawg,” five of them are not part of dialogue. Such “brutalization” and “over-bluntness”—as Burke describes “naturalism”—drives Fountain’s narration (Philosophy 128).

The novel opens with the narrator-Billy voice describing his attempt to chase away a hangover with five “Jack and Cokes” while Bravo squad rides to the stadium in a “snow-white Hummer with six doors to a side” (1-2). Or, as narrator-Billy describes it, “Bravo is nicely blazed” by the time they get to the stadium (1). When it starts raining,
the narrator-Billy voice describes the weather: “It’s raining, sort of, the air pilled with a dangling, brokedick mizzle into which umbrellas are constantly being raised and lowered, up, down, up, down, like a leisurely game of whack-a-mole” (217-218). These are but a few of the slang expressions that are scattered throughout the novel. Some of them are not only unique to young people, but they are, apparently, also unique to the military. A C-130 is described as climbing away from Baghdad in a “hard spiraling scrooge” (4). The narrator-Billy describes the last two weeks of their Victory Tour as “the pussification of Bravo,” meaning that they are out of shape and “soft” (22). Billy feels “pussified”; so he drops to the ground in front of a pizza counter in his dress uniform and does fifty pushups. And later, when a cheerleader asks the soldiers how long they have been in Iraq; Billy answers, “We infilled August twelfth,” meaning that Bravo arrived, or “infiltrated” into Iraq (245). One would think the use of such language would hurt Billy’s chances to make a romantic connection with a Dallas Cowboy cheerleader; it doesn’t.

In his drive to render such language as “full-bore” and as “headlong” as possible, Fountain also resorts to the copious use of italics, capital letters, bold face font, phonetic spellings, and an abundance of exclamation points. The officer in charge of this group of young adults is a hard-of-hearing, combat-wounded man named Major McLaurin. When one of the soldiers tries to get his attention in the opening scene, the text reads, “He turns to Major Mac and slows down his rate of speech to moron speed. ‘MAY-JURH, MACK-LAAUUURIN, SIR! SAR-JINT, HOLLI-DAY, HERE, SAYS, YOU’RE, GAY’” (3).

Since the entire novel is set at the Cowboys’ football game amid a cacophony of sounds,
and Billy is increasingly intoxicated as the day progresses, Fountain tries to capture and express that noise in word clouds; important words haphazardly dot the page in a mocking rendering of a Texas accent and clichéd expressions (see fig. 7). This could be a reasonable way to display the manner in which a drunk teenager encounters such noise in a crowded stadium, but Fountain does so six different times through the novel (2, 38, 45, 120, 148-149, 152). In one such smattering, a number of “Bush-isms” cascade down the page: “terrRr,” “Eye-rack,” “Sod’m,” “nina leven,” “dih-mock-cruh-see” (38). Fountain deploys a similar technique for the lyrics of the national anthem (203-207) and Destiny Child’s halftime music (229-231). It engages the reader in some kind of phonetic game of sounding-it-out that is, for a fleeting moment, slightly enjoyable. Yet, in Fountain’s effort to make the novel “sound” right, it ultimately rings false.

![Image of Billy Lynn's Long Halftime Walk]

Fig. 7: Example of a *Billy Lynn* “word cloud.” Courtesy author’s collection.
Such narration doesn’t give the reader a rest, and it also doesn’t require any sort of constructive imagination. “Moron speed” and the slur “gay” may be clever kitsch expressions that teenagers in the military use often, and the same may be true for “emo” and “scrooge” and “infilled.” They could also, possibly, suggest that the young and unread do much of America’s fighting. Indeed, these issues are directly discussed later in the novel when Billy and another soldier smoke marijuana with a dish washer in a hidden corner of Texas Stadium (69). However, without nuance, such examples of how soldiers “really talk” come across as dated replications of clichéd teenaged speech and nothing more. The attempt to reduce language into phonemes also runs the risk of too much specificity. I was a pilot in the Air Force in Iraq and Afghanistan, and I never heard an aircraft’s climb described as a “scrooge.” I kind of like how that word sounds, but it doesn’t resonate with the reality Fountain wants to capture at all. The issue isn’t one of verisimilitude; it is the fact that Fountain’s stylistic pandering to experienced actuality doesn’t necessarily paint a vivid picture of reality or deepen our affinity for Billy; rather, his language gets close to creating a “video game” styled period piece, the very type of war story that Fountain said he was trying to avoid.

David Lawrence suggests that the men of Bravo squad are “instantly recognizable to every person who’s ever worn a uniform” (96). They barely are to me, and I don’t think recognizing these “types” is dependent on insider knowledge about the military. The only way I understand the type these characters are drawn to represent is because they are the common characters of so much other war literature—there is a harsh but
respected NCO, a clueless officer (or in this case, a literally deaf one), and a young hero
involuntarily thrown into military service (Billy destroyed the car of his sister’s boyfriend
after a bad breakup, and the Texas judge offers either jail-time or service in the Army).
These men are caricatures that imply very little depth of character beyond the page. And
thus, the members of Bravo join a long list of other perishable elements in the novel.
Destiny’s Child will be an obscure reference to a forgotten pop music group in another
ten years, if it isn’t already. There is also a sustained joke about Hillary Swank’s
tendency to play masculine roles in movies (she is rumored to be interested in playing the
role of Billy Lynn if Bravo ever succeeds in selling the movie rights to their story). Many
of these contextual mechanisms (or weightings) of *Billy Lynn* carry a definite shelf life,
and we must take care to not read it “straight” or we would ascribe the untenable attitude
of superiority, of being “holier than thou” to Fountain and his propaganda (*Counter-
Statement* 183). As Burke says, “If a work of art were perfectly adapted to one situation,
by this very fact its chances of subsequent perfection would be eliminated, as the
identical situation will not recur” (*Counter-Statement* 181).

Ernest Hemingway finds similar problems in the dialogue of John Dos Passos’
*Three Soldiers* (1921). He calls it the “‘Twenty-three skidoo’ and ‘Ish ka bibble’ school
of American writing”:

> There are certain words that are a permanent, but usually unpublishable part of the language. They are how men have talked actually, when under stress for hundreds of years. But to substitute slang expressions for these words, slang being a language which becomes a dead language at least every three years, makes a defect in writing which causes it to die as fast as the slang expressions die. (Intro xvii)
In *The Philosophy of Literary Form*, Burke, like Hemingway, also singles out Dos Passos’ style. Burke begins by calling him a “naturalist” (126). Dos Passos, Burke says, is a practitioner of the “‘hard-boiled’ style” that affects a kind of “academic school of naturalism” (126). All of this holds true for Fountain’s mechanisms outlined above as well, and it is my argument that all of his stylistic decisions reflect his anxiety over meeting the aesthetic criteria for realism that today reigns as the critical approach to war literature: the ideology of combat gnosticism.

From this standpoint, despite Fountain’s goal of sounding “correct,” it doesn’t really matter whether or not he ever actually achieves that goal. As Burke reminds us,

> [T]he study of literature as social document can lead to an overemphasis upon motives that are merely local in some given historical period; whereas a literary work’s appeal does *not* depend upon motivational ingredients that appear and disappear with the duration of that particular period. (“Realism” 31-32)

Fountain has worked very hard to create a social document of an extremely specific moment. What the language and the forced plot turns of *Billy Lynn* leave us with is a sort of “palimpsest.” Or, as Burke describes the term and its effect on a work of literature, palimpsests are “places in a work that are misread simply because readers who only know the text may lack the historical knowledge needed to grasp the full implication of some particular passage or style” (“Realism” 32). Fountain has slightly effaced a moment cemented in time, an event fixed on YouTube and the archives of the National Football League. That makes it attractive and compelling, for the moment at least, but it runs the risk of being misread.
In “Realism, Occidental Style,” Burke refers to Coleridge’s distinction between an “imitation” and a “copy,” and Burke makes the point that, for Coleridge, “only an ‘imitation’ would meet his requirements for an act of the poetic ‘imagination’” (37). *Billy Lynn* comes very close to being a “copy,” which, Burke says, “would be as dead as the mere waxwork realistic representation of some historic figure, clothed in a costume exactly proper to the times” (37). In “Auscultation, Creation, and Revision,” Burke describes the problems that attend a work that, like *Billy Lynn*, is rooted in a heavily “weighted” contextual historical moment:

[One] might find such “weighting” excessive, a “rhetorical exaggeration,” since his own attitude does not lead him to meet the poet “halfway,” . . . and the observation may help us to understand somewhat why different historic periods have such vastly differing ideas as to what they shall call “mere rhetoric.” A work tends to become “mere rhetoric” when it has been strongly weighted by a specific situation and this situation meanwhile has been completely changed so that, the “gravitational pull” being gone, the “weighted” material now seems “gaseous.” (136)

Fountain’s speech that evening at the Air Force Academy was quite clear regarding his political rhetoric and the specific situation (the way Americans engage war) that drives it. However, his words made it clear where the primary challenge lies for the reader of his war novel, perhaps even all war novels. The challenge for a reader is in determining whether or not he or she wishes to meet the poet “halfway,” in either accepting the rhetoric as appropriately weighted, regardless authorial intention or biography.
The Mortification of Billy Lynn

Despite its “over-caffeinated” style, Billy Lynn lends itself to examination according to Burke’s scapegoating mechanism. However, it is best understood through the ways Fountain emphasizes one dramatistic element of the pentad (scene, act, agent, purpose, agency) over all the others. Burke first worked out this linkage—what he called “ratios”—in A Grammar of Motives (1955). Burke likens the connections between each element of the pentad to the human hand. Each finger (or term) is “distinct from one another,” but they “merge in the palm of the hand” (xv). Thus, one can reduce any dramatistic situation to the “essential” term, the “causal ancestor” (xvi). Billy Lynn’s scene-act-agent ratio, what Burke describes as the “context of situation,” reveals—despite itself—a useful scapegoating mechanism at work behind Fountain’s ideas regarding the Fantasy Industrial Complex (“Realism” 33).

In Billy Lynn’s case, the “scene” is the clear causal ancestor; it is the “container” of the act and the agents. As Billy and his buddies move around the stadium, the scene in which they find themselves modifies all of their pronouncements, and pronounce is all they can do. As Burke describes the scene-act ratio, the scene contains the action “ambiguously . . . and in the course of the [novel’s] development, this ambiguity is converted into a corresponding articulacy. The proportion would be: scene is to act as implicit is to explicit” (Grammar 7). The agents of Billy Lynn never really act unless we consider the soldiers’ speech-acts as their only examples of agency. Their “utterances,” as J.L. Austin would define them, are “performatives” only; or, as Austin says, “to say
something is to do something” (109). The members of Bravo squad (the agents, or actors) achieve articulacy according to the scenic conditions of the stadium and the shifting demands of each successive mini-scene. During war and their televised “Battle of Al-Ansakar Canal,” they had agency, but inserted as they are into Texas Stadium, they mark time until they go back to Iraq by getting drunk, putting rowdy football fans in sleeper-hold headlocks, making out with cheerleaders, and getting in fights with stagehands from the halftime show. The reader is aware of this rounding out of their characterizations, but these physical “acts” are all hidden from the watchful and admiring eyes of the public. So, in the dramatistic scene of the stadium, they don’t ever really act beyond what Austin would describe as “locutionary acts” (109).

Or, as John Searle writes, these soldiers use “indirect speech-acts,” performatives in which a “speaker communicates to the hearer more than he actually says by way of relying on their mutually shared background information, both linguistic and nonlinguistic, together with the general powers of rationality and inference on the part of the hearer” (32). These indirect speech-acts are key elements for how Billy and Bravo squad are shaped into convenient scapegoats. As they move around the stadium, they act (speak) depending on the demands of the other agents; they maintain the appropriately friendly and expected banter based on “mutually shared background information” with the rest of the football fans (Searle 32). Thus, speaking becomes their most important mission as they progress toward their return to Iraq. For each “thank you for your service” the soldiers hear, they follow with obscuring-but-expected responses, an
exchange that essentially allows the foolish civilian a chance to unload another portion of public guilt on the soldiers’ shoulders.

Failing to maintain the appropriate level of military bearing through the appropriate speech-act is what Sergeant Dime, the group’s leader, continuously calls “flaking.” In the opening scene, as Billy ponders the strip clubs from the previous night and a “pale, spongy Twinkie of a human being crammed into starched blue jeans and fancy cowboy boots” who accosts him with another thank-you-for-your-service platitude in the hotel lobby, he gets a little too introspective (1). Or, as the narrator-Billy voice puts it, “Billy subsides into a gnarled, secret funk” (2). Sergeant Dime immediately notices Billy’s “secret funk” and points it out to the group. “Billy,” he says, “you’re flaking on me” (3). So Billy’s goal for the day becomes avoiding—via indirect speech-acts—humiliation in the face of adulation, or as he thinks of it, silently, “no sir, thank you sir, I respectfully refuse to act like a moron, sir!” (10). This cheesy line may draw groans from any close reader, but it shows us how Billy and Bravo squad “act” in public by speaking or not speaking. They accept their scapegoat roles by modulating their diction and utterances according to the attendant social situation, all in the attempt to avoid “flaking.”

When the Jumbotron hails the “HEROS (sic) OF AL-ANSAKAR CANAL!!!!!!!” scores of “well-adjusted citizens” mob them with handshakes and backslapping (37). Billy assumes what he calls, “the stance.” Or, as the narrator-Billy voice describes it:

Billy rises and assumes the stance for such occasions, back straight, weight balanced center-mass, a reserved yet courteous expression of his youthful face. He came to the style more or less by instinct, this tense, stoic vein of male Americanism defined by multiple generations of movie
and TV actors, which conveniently furnishes him a way of being without having to think about it too much. You say a few words, you smile occasionally. You let your eyes seem a little tired. You are unfailingly modest and gentle with women, firm of handshake and eye contact with men. (37).

Through this “stance” and a “few words,” Billy passively accepts another load of public guilt, but he can only do so if he dons the proper mask. And this mask works wonders: “people totally eat it up . . . They mash in close, push and shove, grab at his arms and talk too loud” (37). As these “affluent people” greet and accost Billy they “tremble” and they “quiver” (39). They “breathe in fitful, stinky huffs,” for this “is the war made flesh . . . His ordeal becomes theirs and vice versa” (39).

This is the pattern of the entire novel as Bravo squad tours the stadium, mixes with the masses, and wins the hearts and minds of an eager citizenry. The soldiers are eager participants in the exchange as well. After all, their compliance affords them rare access to the inner sanctums of the stadium’s society, and their potential failure as scapegoats lends the novel a much-needed sense of suspense. When they are treated to a Thanksgiving meal in the “Stadium Club” where “the carpet is coal-slurry gray, the furnishings a scuffed, faux-baronial mélange of burgundy vinyls and oxblood veneers reminiscent of a 1970s Holiday Inn,” they are already drunk, but their speech-acts reassure us that the mask will stay firmly in place (51). As a number of “nearby millionaires” greet Bravo squad, Billy’s mind again begins to wander, and Sergeant Dime “woofs” across the table, “Billy! You’re flaking on me” (54). When a “ruddy fellow” sits down at the table and tells them all about his family’s oil company and the “bold new technology” they use to “juice more crude out of the Barnett Shale” (64), the “Bravos
fold their hands and look down at their plates” (65). When the man is done, Bravo squad speaks together, literally. Sergeant Dime says something bland to the man and then he asks the others, “Isn’t that right, Bravo?” (65). They all answer, “instantly, with gusto, Yes, Sergeant!” (65, emphasis original).

Fountain’s decision to exaggerate how an adored and disciplined group of soldiers may behave in public is part and parcel of his propaganda and his capitulation to combat gnosticism. A certain audience may even find such pandering to clichés of military behavior tiring. Every time I read the scene above, I find myself thinking, “That would never happen.” That might be the whole point, though, as Fountain’s scene effectively emphasizes the way that combat soldiers often become passive symbols of purgation and nothing more. The public sees and hears what it wants to hear; the reader sees another. In public, these scapegoats stand at attention and say “sir” and “ma’am” and snap off sharp salutes during the national anthem. When the public’s gaze is turned elsewhere, they belch (23); they “dip” chewing tobacco and spit the juice into “spit cups” (217). They sneak drinks, smoke weed, and talk about blowjobs at the strip club from the night before (69). When they meet Norm and his wife, Billy gets an erection: “her bitchiness makes him a little bit hard” (112). The civilians in Billy Lynn refuse to admit that these soldiers are just normal young men with flaws and questionable decision-making skills, but we are privy to these soldiers’ normal acts, acts that more fairly paint them as immature adolescents having fun before they go back to war and the threat of death.
The hero’s mask begins to slip, though, and we join Sergeant Dime in his worry that they all might fully “flake” and cheat the adoring public out of their (our) cheap redemption. Billy talks to a businessman and asks marijuana-fueled questions full of childlike wonder: “I mean, okay,” Billy asks the man, “like where do you start, where does the money come from for, well, the stadium?” (119). Billy keeps sneaking more drinks, with more frequency, and Sergeant Dime builds the suspense by continuing to accuse Billy of “flaking” and reminding us all that they will be back “in the shit in two days” (121, 123). All of their scene-shifting passive action takes its toll on Bravo, and as they are repeatedly reminded of their sign-carrying significance, that “their fame is not their own” (28), they get increasingly close to breaking the unspoken contract that they are to be this society’s purgative victims.

As we near the halftime show, the threat of Billy’s “flaking” keeps the narrative moving. During a pregame press conference, Billy makes eye contact across a crowded room before the game with a born again Christian cheerleader named Faison. Billy, also a virgin, but one who paid for a twenty dollar blow job from a stripper the night before, is increasingly concerned with the status of his virginity, even more so than his return to Iraq. After a five-minute conversation, Billy and Faison grope each other behind the stage backdrop, and Faison achieves an orgasm. The plot here is somewhat anemic in its contrivance (even more so than the party on the C-130), but its coarseness highlights the importance of Billy’s proportional response to it. The narrator-Billy even admits that the sexual encounter is rather unlikely: “It occurs to him to wonder was it even real. It’s too
perfect, just exactly the sort of delusion a desperate soldier would dream up” (159-160). It is a necessary distraction, one that we and Billy need in order to get through the halftime show. Such an improbable plotline may be horribly off-putting, but the scene-act-agent ratio deepens Billy’s status as an object to be admired, desired, used, and then discarded, laden with a nation’s worth of attendant guilt.

We have followed Billy around Texas Stadium, and observed his growing frustrations with his fellow Americans, or, as his refrain goes, “Oh my people” (23, 125, 212, 298). But we need not worry that someone is going to discover the two lovers during their ridiculous sex scene or follow through with his daydream of running off to a Texas ranch with this cheerleader. Fountain may abuse his plot, but in such moments, when Billy is allowed to act like a preoccupied teenager, Fountain’s stylistic choices reinforce Billy’s fitness as a scapegoat. Billy’s single-minded obsession with sex and self keeps him from getting angry with his well-meaning sister, and it allows us to accept his worry, brief though it is, about his mother in the event that he is killed in combat. He does so in a manner befitting any nineteen-year old with a martyr complex: “All ego aside,” he thinks, “it would be awful for her, possibly fatal, though not right away. He envisions a long slow process of interior numbing-out” (255). Billy never fails in his role as our unsullied hero despite his teenager shenanigans, a maturity level that extends to his part in war. He survives two cheerleader make-out sessions with his virginity well intact, and he politely rejects his sister’s offer to help him go AWOL. He won’t flake on Sergeant Dime, and he won’t flake on the war in Iraq.
As our convenient scapegoat, the sexual tension of his meeting with the cheerleader, the negotiations about Bravo’s movie rights, and the other obnoxious things Billy does and says ultimately serve to reassure us that Billy will think like a teenager, ignore the moral implications of his agency in war, and continue as our scapegoat. That is what the scapegoat mechanism highlights in this novel’s construction; the Fantasy Industrial Complex never invites the public to hold Billy or any other member of Bravo responsible for any of the negative byproducts of the war they enact. Who can blame a virgin-hero for doing what we asked him to do?

Still, by the time the halftime show finally arrives, Bravo squad teeters on the balance between symbol and human, between “flaking” and maintaining their role as scapegoats. “Short of blood sacrifice or actual sex on the field,” the narrator-Billy voice muses as they take the stage, “you couldn’t devise a better spectacle for turning up the heat” (235). One of the Bravos nicknamed “Lodis” is almost too drunk to stand. Another soldier, when he does mount the stage, is driven to tears by the “prime-time trigger for PTSD” of the halftime show (230). The narrator-Billy voice complains to himself about being so manipulated: “It’s not right. Nobody said anything about this. What might be merely embarrassing in real life is made obscene and hostile by TV” (239). The halftime show goes off without a hitch, though; the mask stays in place and Beyoncé entertains the masses with Bravo squad right there at her side.

The climactic halftime show does end with an odd scuffle between stagehand “roadies” and the soldiers, and that fight carries over into the novel’s final scene, but in
its contrivance, this silly fistfight side story barely registers in the novel’s scene-act-agent ratio. When they all get back to their seats after the halftime show, Sergeant Dime gives a “flaking” soldier named Sykes a “big fat Valium” (he just carries them around for just such an occasion), and they all settle in for the end of the game and the end of their Victory Tour (260). When they do speak again, they manage to speak again as one, in no uncertain slang-driven terms, to turn down Norm’s pathetic offer. Or, as Billy tells Sergeant Dime, “Remember what he said in there, he was like, you guys oughta take the deal because it’s all you’ve got, and something’s better than nothing? But I don’t think so. I think sometimes nothing is better than something” (283). “Sorry, guy,” Sergeant Dime tells Norm, “but fitty-five (the offer was for $5,500 each) don’t cut it. And Bravo speaks as one on this” (283). In Burkean terms, their “Victory Tour” was nothing but public “advertising” for “courage and individual sacrifice for group advantage” that “enable[d] the humble man to share the worth of the hero by ‘identification’” (Attitudes 35). And so, in the end, Billy redeems us all, for the hero’s symbolic death (Billy’s return to Iraq) allows him to “risk himself and die that others may be vicariously heroic” (Attitudes 36). Reunited and past any further threats of further “flaking,” Bravo can return to Iraq, and we are ready to see them go, with our shame in tow.

Did Fountain get it right? I certainly wish he’d never bothered with that concern, that he had held Billy Lynn at least partially responsible for some of his own agency in the cycle of war’s violence and justification, a cycle that humanity is destined to repeat again and again. However, in what I consider the cleanest passage in the entire book, one
not cluttered with excessive slang or fouled with italics or phonetic translations of sound, Fountain’s narrator-Billy does discuss the lasting conflict between war’s experience and the idea that it can actually lead to a useful epistemology afterwards:

For the past two weeks he’s been feeling so superior and smart because of all the things he knows from the war, but forget it, they are the ones in charge, these saps, these innocents, their homeland dream is the dominant force. His reality is their reality’s bitch; what they don’t know is more powerful than all the things he knows, and yet he’s lived what he’s lived and knows what he knows, which means what, something terrible and possibly fatal, he suspects. To learn what you have to learn at the war, to do what you have to do, does this make you an enemy of all that sent you to war? (306)

To repeat this chapter’s epigraph from Burke, “The artist is like the man who cried ‘Fire!’ in a theater. The ‘brilliancy’ of the fellow arose out of the fact that he shouted the word best adapted to ‘touching off’ a stampede under these particular conditions” (“Auscultation” 137). The passage above is almost enough to light the fuse below a powder keg; it is almost enough to “touch off” a stampede that may rupture the “dominant force” of the “homeland dream” to which Billy finally surrenders. Whether or not one decides that Ben Fountain shouted elsewhere the appropriate words via the appropriate style in his novel depends on a reader’s acceptance of his comic frame. Only then, through the resulting perspective by incongruity, can we learn from Billy Lynn, as Condit puts it, that “laughing at our petty jealousies is the prerequisite to calming our war-like fervors” (278).
Chapter Five: The Convenient Scapegoat in David Abrams’ FOBBIT

We find our way through this everchanging universe by certain blunt schemes of generalization, conceptualization, or verbalization—but words have limited validity. Their very purpose being to effect practical simplifications of reality, we should consider them inadequate for description as it really is. (Kenneth Burke, *Permanence* 92)

While the vast bulk of the American war literature that has emerged from our post 9/11 wars might indicate otherwise, comedy and satire have emerged as flexible vehicles by which an author can vigorously examine the way these wars have been fought and justified. The previous chapter assesses Ben Fountain’s *Billy Lynn’s Long Halftime Walk* as a hyper-realistic attempt to present American citizens and their use of soldiers as pawns in a perverse moneymaking game. In that novel, Fountain blends an overt political message with his version of a contextually specific historical moment in order to affect an extended attack on American pop culture. David Abrams’ war novel *FOBBIT* (2012) takes a similarly colloquial and satirical tack, but it differs vastly as far as Kenneth Burke’s concept of the comic and his scapegoat mechanism is concerned. As such, *FOBBIT* merits analysis beyond the basic, reflexive laughter it pushes to the forefront of both its construction and its reception.
Abrams’ decision to use humor and satire in his art was no easy choice. He acknowledges his worry about bringing humor to war literature in an interview with Jennifer Liebrum:

It took me six years to write this book, and all along the way I worried about whether or not people would want to read a comedy about war . . . I wondered if the wars in Iraq and Afghanistan were still too fresh, too raw for laughter. (n. pag.)

Like Fountain, Abrams had to overcome considerable reservations about approaching the seriousness of a post-9/11 war with a comic form. Whereas Fountain was overly concerned with his portrayal of the American soldier, Abrams’ concern was rooted more within the wider subject of war itself. Regardless, each author recognizes that the line between the serious and comic, particularly when trauma and death on a large scale is involved, can be a difficult one to negotiate.

As Adam Rovner puts it in his analysis of humor and deception in Holocaust fiction, many critics maintain that “humor is unethical given the horrors of the past” (1). Despite this critique, as Rovner points out, the rhetoric of humor has relentlessly forced its way into the representation of the suffering and trauma of the Holocaust. The same is true for contemporary war fiction. As Kenneth Burke says of comedy and the comic frame, it “is neither holy euphemistic, nor holy debunking—hence it provides the charitable attitude towards people that is required for purposes of persuasion and cooperation, but at the same time maintains our shrewdness concerning the simplicities of ‘cashing in’” (Attitudes 166). Indeed, when the subject of literature is war and when the agents of that war are also the artists, there may even be an urgent ethical imperative to
incorporate humor in contemporary American war literature, to bring laughter to otherwise serious topics. Humor and irony allow Abrams a frame by which he can “shrewdly persuade” his readers that today, when Americans go to war, a massive bureaucracy goes with them, and the resulting “battle” doesn’t exactly look the way one might expect. In *FOBBIT*, the “fighting” does not happen in pitched battles in dusty Baghdad alleys; rather, war is fought by office workers, in cubicles.

Alice Fahs, in *The Imagined Civil War* (2001), points out that humor in the literature about the Civil War allowed writers the necessary tools by which they could highlight the crude and embarrassing aspects of war. Through satire, irony, and misdirection, authors can pay equal attention to buffoons and cowards alongside heroes and courageous warriors. These less celebrated aspects of war, she says, often remain otherwise ignored or uncommented upon in traditional modes of war fiction:

> Instead of merely reaffirming the values of patriotism, discipline, obedience, and endurance, war humor acknowledged that sloth, laziness, cupidity, disobedience, and negligence were also among the values associated with the war. Most of all—and most transgressive of the heroic norms of patriotic literature—war humor made the simple but profoundly subversive point that war was ridiculous. (224)

This is where the novels of Abrams and Fountain share a common virtue; both authors subvert the very concept of armed conflict by highlighting the more unappealing traits of the way it is fought and consumed. Both put humor to work in their tales about war in order to slyly change the focus from the valorous to the absurd.

For this reason, both *Billy Lynn* and *FOBBIT* are extremely important works of war literature. Both authors seek to highlight the disconnect that exists between the
reality of war and the “spin” that it undergoes as soon as it passes into the various forms of reportage and art. Furthermore, both novels are committed to “real” speech patterns, military sayings, and technical jargon in their representations of war fighting and of American culture writ large. Both authors also rely on insider nomenclature and countless pop culture references to flavor their novels with authority and authenticity. Such a style can be a liability, though. It is as if, the insider language of both novels suggests, war satire cannot be successful without first waving a recognizable flag of experience-based verisimilitude. In a recent review of Michael Pitre’s Iraq war novel *Fives and Twenty-Fives* (2014), Helen Benedict suggests that Pitre’s “technical descriptions” of an American platoon operating in Iraq ultimately damages the novel’s literary worth since it causes the work to “veer away from honesty and towards glamorization” (n. pag). *Billy Lynn* and *FOBBIT* both suffer from an overreliance on the same stylistic crutch. Benedict, a professor in Columbia University’s school of journalism and the author of *Sand Queen*, argues that such “description reads like every other macho war novel, dwelling on the technology and jargon of military life rather than on the suffering the military inflicts, thus obscuring the horror of war while adding to the mystique” (n. pag).

In *FOBBIT*’s case, for instance, rarely does a sentence pass that doesn’t include military slang, an awkward military acronym, or a mundane detail that demands further explanation in parentheses or with another sentence. In one of the novel’s opening scenes—which comes to be known as the “incident at Intersection Quillpen”—a suicide bomber crashes a car full of explosives into an American tank in the middle of a busy
Baghdad intersection. The bomb fails to explode, and this is how Abrams’ narrator describes the scene:

A platoon from bravo Company (under the command of one Captain A. Shrinkle) had been escorting Alpha Company as it returned from mission in Khadhimiya, taking Route Franklin as briefed in last night’s update. No issues; everything going swimmingly. Until they got to Intersection Quillpen where, at approximately oh-nine-thirty hours, the convoy of Humvees and tanks was forced to a halt by a herd of goats crossing the road . . . Then came a sound off to the left as the soldiers sat at the goat-clogged intersection. Number Three Tank was the first to spot the suspected insurgent vehicle coming at a high rate of speed toward the formation. As the car accelerated up the frontage road, it quickly changed status from a possible Vehicle-Borne Improvised Explosive Device to a probable Vehicle-Borne Improvised Explosive Device. Gunners from Tanks Number Two and Three immediately applied Force Protection Measures 1 through 4 and would have implemented Force Protection Measure 5 except by that time the VBIED had already rammed into the left rear of Tank Number Three. (23)

Unless the reader has driven a tank in Baghdad or is, for whatever reason, familiar with something called Force Protection Measures, it is difficult to wade through such language. To be fair, this is sort of the point Abrams seems to be making with such a style. He is suggesting that powerful bureaucracies and excessive regulations hinder the effectiveness of the American soldier in war. That is, official language and contrived nomenclature slows down the readability of a passage like this one just as official procedures put in place by officers and leaders far from the battlefield have similar impacts on actual combat operations. Thus, one might argue, Abrams is merely criticizing such practices by exposing them as ludicrous.

Still, though, Abrams doesn’t fully escape Benedict’s criticism. He may question the effectiveness of “officialese” by displaying its obtrusiveness, but elsewhere in the
novel he overtly glorifies American soldiers by celebrating their slang and their colloquialisms. But again, this could be seen as another attempt to criticize something by exposing it. In FOBBIT, a character named Lieutenant Colonel Vic Duret is a prime example of a soldier we are supposed to admire as one of the few “real” warriors in the novel. However, throughout the narrative, this man becomes a veritable military slang machine as Abrams establishes Duret’s personality and this man’s individual warrior ethos. Every character in FOBBIT speaks in euphemisms and clichés, but each one of Duret’s narrations is packed with special terms, phrases, and military sayings, as if Abrams uses him to unload onto the page as many witty military colloquialisms as he can. Page sixteen alone—toward the beginning of the first chapter that focuses on Duret—includes at least six of these awkward constructions: phrases like “high pucker factor,” “manifest destination,” “battering-ram headaches,” “ballsy confidence,” “kick the situation’s ass,” and “back-briefs” (16, emphasis original). However, just like the scene at the “incident at Intersection Quillpen,” it is possible to see such language as a sort of veil, one that is designed to obfuscate and confuse rather than deepen Duret’s characterization. Later in this chapter, I will return to Duret’s image as a warrior, but for now, it is safe to say that FOBBIT’s humor and style challenge us to question the way war and soldiers are managed, controlled, and packaged with language.

However obscure the novel’s military jargon may get—indeed, because of it—the ethos of hero worship is what Abrams keeps at the center of his story. By illuminating the ludicrous and colloquial alongside the courageous and the official, FOBBIT invites a
reading that exposes a system and order that is nothing but ridiculous. Toward the middle of the novel, an Army general clips his toenails during an important briefing. Everyone listening in on the conference call can hear the snipping sounds as he moves from toe to toe (182-183). For an entire deployment, one Major does little else than play solitaire on his computer (155-156). Another soldier defecates in his commander’s helmet and leaves a note that reads, “Have a Nice Day, Shithead” (148). While the novel’s overall tone may obscure the destruction that the U.S. military inflicts, and while it may glorify the way people like Duret talk and think, Abram’s narrative style allows him to do something Fountain avoids. It affords him a way to critically assess all aspects of the society that makes war like the one in Iraq possible, criticism that includes the status of American soldiers like Lieutenant Colonel Vic Duret. As Burke reminds, the “comic frame should enable people to be observers of themselves while acting . . . One would ‘transcend’ himself by noting his own foibles” (Attitudes 171). Abrams’ language is annoying at times, and the plot may largely ignore Iraqi suffering, but it also allows us ample opportunity to note the massive foible that controls each character.

Benedict suggests that only two questions “matter” when one evaluates war literature of any style: “is it honest? And does it glamorize war?” (n. pag). This is an especially difficult test for comedic treatments of war, but FOBBIT succeeds in this regard, and the length to which Abrams extends his satire via a Burkean scapegoat mechanism is what marks it so. This is also where FOBBIT stands apart from Billy Lynn. As the previous chapter outlines, Fountain’s novel is severely limited by his concern with
“getting it right.” That distraction results in a novel that somewhat excuses Billy Lynn and his fellow members of Bravo squad from any rigorous behavioral or ethical analysis. Fountain’s soldiers are props only, and while he has no problem mocking almost every other aspect of American war culture, his text somewhat happily fellates the combat war hero hand-in-hand with the very people Fountain criticizes for ignorantly doing the same thing. Abrams departs sharply from that model, and this is the defining characteristic of FOBBIT: it completes its overall satirical message—as this chapter will show—despite the target of the satire. It also provides the reading public with a narrative that gets very close to showing us how the typical American soldier likely experienced war in Iraq. There are buffoons and cowards in America. Doesn’t that mean that there should be cowardly and buffoonish Americans in Iraq too?

What is a Fobbit?

War is anything but glamorous in FOBBIT and neither are any of its agents. They fart; they curse; they complain; they lack compassion, self-awareness, honesty, and courage. As Abrams explains to David Lawrence in a 2013 interview: “everybody falls victim to satire at one point or another in the book. I’m an equal-opportunity offender” (169). Such a frank representation of the bureaucratic mess that attends modern warfare, then, stands as both refreshingly honest and painfully valid. No aspect of the way the United States operates in Iraq avoids Abrams’ comic assessment, nor do any of the Americans who work there. In Attitudes Toward History, Burke writes that, “Like
tragedy, comedy warns against the dangers of pride, but its emphasis shifts from crime to stupidity” (41). There is stupidity and there are crimes in FOBBIT, and every character suffers from an overweening sense of pride. Yet, when we analyze Abrams’ text according to Kenneth Burke’s concept of hierarchical psychosis and trace the scapegoat mechanism it engenders, it becomes clear that, with the proper critical approach, it is indeed possible to mock and criticize war, to treat its agents as stupid or misguided without risking an accusation of ethical insensitivity or unpatriotic propagandizing.

FOBBIT, written by a former Army sergeant and public affairs serviceman whose wartime journal provided much of the foundation for the novel, is set in Iraq in 2005 at a sprawling Forward Operating Base (or FOB) called FOB Triumph. The base is filled with two kinds of soldiers: combat grunts from the infantry (like Duret) and unfit poseurs who never leave the safe confines of the base. The social order on this base follows a universally agreed upon narrative: while the combat grunts fight and die, the supporting force of staff and office workers (Fobbits) remain ensconced in the relative safety of Western-style cubicles spread throughout the passages and rooms of one of Sadaam Hussein’s old palaces. There, these support troops count down the days left in their deployments; they craft press releases; and they build PowerPoint presentations. Thus, the hierarchy of FOB Triumph is based on—above all else—the social status that separates support troops and combat warriors or “door-kickers” as they are called in the novel. Yet, this hierarchy of Fobbits and door-dickers is shaky at best and entirely untenable at worst. By examining the hierarchical psychosis at work within the novel, we
can show how the line between a Fobbit and a door-kicker is a vague one indeed, how combat experience is a distinction that differs very little from any other wartime experience.

As Burke sees it, hierarchy and order are principles that drive much of man’s life, conflicts, and—most importantly—man’s symbolic redemption via the vicarious victimage of a scapegoat. This is exactly how it operates in FOBBIT. War on FOB Triumph has very little to do with the ways American men and women fight against a tenacious or determined insurgency. The novel isn’t a triumphant tale of individual sacrifice or heroic courage in the face of untold violence, nor is it an investigation into the human toll of war. It isn’t about combat or battle or killing in the name of one’s country; rather, it is a tale about a group of soldiers who are focused on one mission alone: maintaining the “pyramidal structure” (Language 19) that keeps combat troops and their presumed courage on the top while “supply clerks, motor pool mechanics, cooks, mail sorters, lawyers, trombone players, logisticians” remain relegated somewhat happily to the bottom (1).

As we will see, this is no easily established order. Hierarchies like the one that keeps the Fobbit in his or her place, Burke points out, are made possible by a sort of social mystery, a symbolic “magic,” that leads to an overall “hierarchical psychosis”

46 Hierarchy even earns a clause in Burke’s definition of man: “Man is the symbol-using (symbol-making, symbol-misusing) animal, inventor of the negative (or moralized by the negative), separated from his natural condition by instruments of his own making, goaded by the spirit of hierarchy (or moved by the sense of order), and rotten with perfection” (Language 16).
(Rhetoric 281-283), and this psychosis creates a “fog of social inequality” (Rhetoric 121). H.D. Duncan writes in Communication and Social Order (1966), “When the enactment of hierarchy becomes so dogmatic and the stages of development so rigid that doubt, question, or creation of new hierarchies are no longer possible and, indeed, are punishable, we enter into the realm of hierarchical psychosis” (122). Or as Burke explains, hypnotic-like linguistic constructions behind the “spirit of hierarchy” introduce “mystifications that cloak the state of division” (Rhetoric 141). As we will see, the characters of FOBBIT definitely try to “cloak the state of division” between Fobbits and door-kickers with symbolic mystification. Each character will try to explain—somewhat futilely—how the Fobbit deserves his or her lowest spot in the base’s class system.

Fig. 8. Cover of Fobbit. Courtesy author’s collection.
When we pick up *FOBBIT*, it doesn’t take long to see how pervasive this particular hierarchical psychosis is on FOB Triumph. Indeed, we are prepared for it before we even open the book, as “Fobbit” is denotatively explained on the cover:

“Fobbit \ˈfā-bət\, noun. Definition: A U.S. Army employee stationed at a Forward Operating Base, esp. during Operation Iraqi Freedom (2003-2011). Pejorative” (see fig. 8). On the one hand, this definition is extremely simple and easy to accept, but, on the other hand, it is deceptively general. The nature of being “stationed” at a base in Iraq doesn’t really clarify any meaning, nor does “Army employee.” Strictly speaking, an “army employee” could be anyone in any uniform, regardless his job description or his level of exposure to combat. Thus, we are left with one operative word, the final one: “Pejorative.” That word alone establishes the status of such a soldier who carries such a label, but it stops well short of explaining why. It tells us nothing about why a “Fobbit” carries negative connotations, suggesting that there is much more to examine about a Fobbit and the hierarchy that makes being a Fobbit a pejorative. Indeed, the rest of Abrams’ satire invites us to do little else than examine the very concept of Fobbit-ness, to closely investigate the way a society manages to socially estrange a thing called a Fobbit.

So what exactly is a Fobbit and why is it a pejorative term? These are the questions Abrams poses with his narrative, and he does so by giving us definitions and descriptions of the Fobbit from the perspective of five different primary characters, each one delivered in the voice of a common omniscient narrator. With every description, the subject (a less-Fobbity Fobbit) and the object (more-Fobbity Fobbit) begin to
dialectically blend into one. The first one comes from an American soldier named Chance Gooding:

They were Fobbits because, at the core, they were nothing but marshmallows. Crack open their chests and in the space where their hearts should be beating with a warrior’s courage and selfless regard, you’d find a pale gooey center. They cowered like rabbits in their cubicles, busied themselves with PowerPoint briefings to avoid the hazard of Baghdad’s bombs, and steadfastly clung white-knuckled to their desks at Forward Operating Base Triumph. (1)

So begins the long denigration of the Fobbit delivered here by a self-loathing public affairs office worker. He is the self-described “poster child for the stay-back-stay-safe soldier,” the “Fobbitest” of them all (2). To be a “Fobbit” or a “Fobber” or a “Fob Dog,” Gooding tells us, is no different than being “a dickless, lily-livered desk jockey back in the States” (3). All of this self-deprecating harshness comes across as hyperbole though, and so we are never quite convinced that things are as Gooding says. And that name—Chance Gooding—it announces the possibility that, despite what this man says in this opening salvo, a Fobbit like him may, eventually, have a “chance” to be “good.” Or in other words, a Fobbit may always have a chance to shake the pejorative nature of the label.

The rest of Gooding’s opening section continues with more imprecision. The first page tells us that a Fobbit wears a uniform, works long hours, and lives near “Baghdad’s bombs” (3). However, like the unfocused definition on the cover, all of this could be true of any soldier, combat exposed or not. The mark of a Fobbit, then, is located somewhere in his character, in his personality. Apparently, that personality is one lacking a sense of selflessness or, more importantly, the opportunity to display it. In theory, this may seem
to be an easy thing to track, but as the rest of the novel’s characters will prove, eagerly exposing oneself to danger is no easy metric. Each one will join Gooding in their disdain for the Fobbit, and each one will muddy the definition further, but no matter how severe Gooding is about himself or how hard he and the others work to mark the edges of a Fobbit, none one of their descriptions ever advances beyond the vague or the bombastic.

Since we get to know Gooding and become increasingly privy to his inner emotions and compassions, his Fobbit-ness ameliorates considerably. Thus, we continually fail to despise him as much as the combat/noncombat/door-kicker/Fobbit hierarchy suggests we should, especially as we begin to meet other Fobbits and other door-kickers. Since Gooding is the only likable character in the novel, we can somewhat forgive him for a sort of cerebral “piety” to a “trained incapacity” that attends his ideas about Fobbit-ness (*Permanence* 10, 7). The other characters are extremely shortsighted; thus, as we meet them, it is easy to dispute their versions of the same piety. In that multicolored picture, it is easy to see that Fobbit-ness is a sad, unjust social construction. It is an untenable class system based on inequality and separation. With each character’s version of Fobbit-ness, however, it becomes possible for us to bridge the gaps in the “pyramidal magic” that keep this division between Fobbits and door-kickers intact. Just as there is no triumph on FOB Triumph, there aren’t really any warriors either. This is the implication to be drawn from this novel: the war in Iraq may be nothing but an internal American battle based on petty jealousies and grudges. There are dead Americans and
dead Iraqis, but in the end the entire war is, as Burke might say, nothing but a “hierarchical embarrassment” (Permanence 279).

A Good Fobbit Is Hard to Find

When Gooding describes a Fobbit, he is not really describing a person. Rather, he is describing the “symbolic fog” that makes the hierarchy of Fobbit-ness possible. In Permanence and Change, Kenneth Burke explains:

“Order” as such makes for a tangle of guilt, mystery, ambition (“adventure”) and vindication that infuses even the most visible and tangible of material “things” with the spirit of the order through which they are perceived. In this sense, man as symbol-using animal must perceive even his most “animalistic” traits dimly through the symbolic fog arising from the social order of which he is part. (288)

Only able to “dimly” recognize his own “animalistic” traits in that mix of “guilt, mystery, ambition, and vindication,” Gooding is really describing the order that he and the other characters subscribe to, a social order that needs a Fobbit’s symbolic existence for the order’s very survival. A seductive and deceptive symbolic fog creates Fobbit-ness and holds him in that lowest place on FOB Triumph’s hierarchy, but there are problems with that structure. It might create unity, but it also creates scapegoats.

Gooding’s hierarchical psychosis drives him to self-identify as a Fobbit so that he can join the rest of FOB Triumph in a collective effort to enact what Burke terms, “congregation by segregation” (Dramatism 29). Congregation by segregation, as Burke describes it, is the habit of groups of people to “spontaneously identify ourselves with some groups or other, some trends or other” and then use that “identification” to establish
a common enemy (29). Thus, after “segregation,” the group can make use of the “tremendous pressures toward a sacrificial motive which the nature of human congregation builds up” (29). This human habit, to delineate society according to largely arbitrary categories (eg. Fobbits and door-kickers), is the basis of the hierarchy principle on FOB Triumph. For example, Gooding may call himself a Fobbit, but he does so in order to congregate with the others; he does so to segregate himself from more loathsome Fobbits. Or, better yet, he does so in order to segregate himself from a scapegoat who doesn’t fully subscribe to the unwritten but agreed upon concept of Fobbit-ness.

Gooding traces the legacy of the Fobbit and the tension that has long existed between support troops and combat troops to Vietnam: “In another war, REMF was the preferred term,” Gooding reports, “but now, in this modern asymmetric theater of operations, there was no ‘rear’ echelon elite sitting in their motherfucking safe-from-harm shelter” (3).47 There, in that self-loathing description, lies the central question of this analysis. In such a “modern asymmetric theater of operations,” what happens when it becomes increasingly difficult to distinguish the individual agents within the pyramidal structure of the order? We may both respect and pity Gooding for his self-deprecations, but we also see that he has long ago lost his ability to recognize the extremely fluid nature of the established hierarchy on FOB Triumph. He forces us to wonder: where does the tension go when door-kickers and Fobbits start looking and acting very much alike?

47 In Vietnam, REMF stood for Rear Echelon Mother Fuckers.
Instead of challenging the order that shuffles some soldiers to the bottom of the hierarchy, Gooding and his peers insist—repeatedly and confidently—that the hierarchy must be preserved at all costs, but for this to happen, some people must be pushed out of the order. As we will see, the “Army employees” of FOB Triumph impulsively congregate by quarantining themselves from a soldier named Abe Lincoln Shrinkle who fails to wholly identify with Fobbits or with door-kickers, and this failure brings the framework of the hierarchy of Fobbit-ness into question. The challenge for the reader, then, is twofold: we must not only interrogate the ways FOB Triumph identifies a Fobbit, but we must also question the inner workings of the hierarchy itself. To put it another way, since the novel ironically and repeatedly insists that the hierarchy of Fobbit-ness is justifiable and righteous, there is little for the reader to do but track the scapegoat mechanism therein and reveal the hierarchy as unjust.

Of the novel’s five primary characters, readers probably come to know and trust Sergeant Gooding the most because he discusses Fobbit-ness more than anyone else. As Gooding sees it, Fobbits and non-Fobbits wear identical uniforms, but whereas his uniform is “neat-pressed” (2), he always notices that the “infantry grunts” wear “wrinkled desert camouflage” (3). Gooding elaborates on this rather insignificant detail, saying that his “lavender-vanilla body wash” leaves him smelling “as if he bathed in gingerbread” whereas the door-kickers smell of “sweat, road dust, and, occasionally, blood” (3, 4). Other differences between Fobbits and door-kickers, Gooding claims, manifest themselves in the lines of the face. Infantry grunts are “the ones with worry and fear
knotting the tight landscape of their foreheads” (3). Fobbits, however, apparently register nothing on their faces; they are merely nagged by the “irritation” and “annoyance” of “what felt like a yearlong camping trip” (3).

This schema is a tenuous one, though. Fobbits and door-kickers can *all* own irons; they can *all* access the same washing machines; they can *all* buy the same lavender-vanilla body wash since they all have the same access to the same PX, or Post Exchange. So, from Gooding, we can conclude two things about a door-kicker. He or she does something that makes him dirty, and he or she is also apparently held to a different standard of personal appearance than everyone else. After a trip to the shower and a change of clothes, all should be equal again, but a door-kicker is allowed a certain latitude in that regard. Deserving that leniency is not the issue; the issue is whether or not one can appropriately and fairly apply the dictates of an entire social order with nothing to go on but dirty uniforms and sad faces.

Interestingly enough, all of Gooding’s distinctions are based on each distinction’s negative, and this explains why he insists on the clarity of a Fobbit’s appearance. As Burke’s definition of man posits, we are all “moralized by the negative” (*Language* 16). Just as evil has no meaning without an opposing concept of good, the smell of Gooding’s body wash is unnoticeable without the sweaty smell of the door-kickers. A uniform isn’t really wrinkly unless a pressed one is nearby for comparison. Without a clean Fobbit for comparison, a door-kicker is a guy who needs a shower. Likewise, the presumptive heroics of the door-kickers have no meaning without the assumed self-preservations of
the Fobbits. Without a public affairs officer sitting at a computer in a cubicle, a door-kicker on a patrol through Baghdad is just a guy or a gal driving around a city in a truck.

In fact, save one anecdote involving an relatively minor character, the door-kickers in this novel never get any opportunity to display superior courage or to show how eagerly they embrace death and danger. Quite on the contrary, the center of FOB Triumph is, without a doubt, the most dangerous place to be for an American soldier. Four door-kickers do indeed die, but they are killed by a luckily-aimed mortar while eating hamburgers at the base’s Burger King. Even then, these deaths—these selfless sacrifices—occur before the events of the novel even begin. The only American death that the reader directly witnesses, the only American bloodshed, happens on FOB Triumph when Captain Abe Shrinkle—the novel’s eventual scapegoat—is killed while floating in a clandestine swimming pool in the very heart of Fobbit country.

Gooding isn’t alone in his attempts to symbolically and physically mark the edges of the Fobbit. The second perspective of the Fobbit comes from Lieutenant Colonel Vic Duret. A champion door-kicker, Duret is our sorely mistaken enforcer of the Fobbit code. Initially, he is introduced negotiating the incident involving the suicide bomber and the American tank at Intersection Quillpen. The commanding officer on the scene, Abe Shrinkle, has failed to act decisively, so Duret must fix the situation without killing the

48 In chapter seventeen, Gooding prepares a “door-kicker” named Kyle Pilley for a television interview about an episode—filmed by insurgents and posted online—in which Pilley is shot in the chest. His body armor stops the bullet and saves his life, so he pops up, shoots the guy who shot him, and then uses his own dressing kit to treat the insurgent’s wounds (202-217).
American troops inside the tank. Here, we are supposed to conclude, is how one acts if one isn’t a Fobbit. This is exactly how Duret thinks, too. As the narrator tell us,

Lieutenant Colonel Vic Duret had come to the point where he hated Fobbits: self-preservationists who never admitted to the fear inside, and instead found ways to stay busy within the boundaries if the triple-rolled concertina wire and walls crenellated with shards of glass. Duret knew of an entire platoon’s worth of officers who clung to the security of headquarters, their asses gradually molding into the shape of a chair. Their aftershave reeked of self-importance . . . These were the idiots shot out by West Point, turds in starched uniforms and glistening high-and-tight haircuts, shiny-foreheaded future corporate executives who used words like envisionment instead of vision. (95)

Duret’s revulsion runs more deeply than Gooding’s, but it doesn’t take us long to see that what he despises in a Fobbit is really what he despises in himself. He thinks he behaves like a door-kicker during this crisis with the suicide bomber, but when we re-examine the scene, we can see that all he does is stand there, complain about Shrinkle and Fobbits, and make a radio call. Instead of displaying competence, courage, or decisiveness, Duret does little else beyond whining. His ire for the Fobbit, delivered as it is in the rather obnoxious thought process of a proud, self-important officer, is just a different version of same hierarchical psychosis as Gooding’s.

Duret situates the door-kicker above the Fobbit, but he only manages to display their equality. Duret says he “hated Fobbits” because he has felt and experienced things he assumes the Fobbit never will, emotions that, according to him, justify his superiority complex (95). For Duret, these extreme emotions also disqualify him from any accusation of being a Fobbit. He tells us of “the nut-shriving terror of careening through traffic” (he mentions his testicles a lot); he pats himself on the back for pretending to enjoy
“having tea and sautéed camel entrails with the province’s sheikh”; and he recalls “the despair” he felt after his men helped to build a power substation that was bombed a week later (96). Duret also claims the privilege of being familiar with death, with never being “certain whether or not the car pulling up behind them was trunk-loaded with explosives” (96). “No,” he concludes, “Fobbits would never know any of this” (96). All of these statements are reasonable enough, but they display the disharmony that exists in the entire hierarchy.

Duret definitely considers Gooding a Fobbit. They run into each other a number of times around the base, but Duret refuses to learn Gooding’s name because, as a Fobbit, Gooding is unworthy of further attention (132). This allows Duret to ignore the fact that Gooding experiences each one of his special emotions. When the intelligence office reports that an attack on FOB Triumph is imminent, Gooding and his fellow Fobbits’ “spines were chilled” by the very thought of “dark figures slipping over the concrete walls, slinking through the concertina wire, hundreds of them trying to overrun FOB Triumph en masse” (177). As an office worker, Gooding is far less proficient at using a rifle or fighting hand-to-hand, so this isn’t cowardice; it makes perfect sense. Instead of congratulating himself as Duret does, he is more honest about his place in the army, and he remains understandably fatalistic about his lack of combat skills, concluding that, if the base is attacked, he is simply “screwed” (178). Gooding may lack a flair for door-kicker bravado when he ponders potential death in combat, but Duret’s terror is just as imaginary. At least Duret has been extensively trained for combat. Based on this
difference, then, Gooding’s terror might even be more reasonable. Besides, we never actually see Duret “careening through traffic,” and all we get are euphemisms for his door-kicker actions. As the narrator says, “Duret and his men spent their days running from one molehill to the other, whacking anything that moved with their amusement-park mallers” (104). As a result, we can’t quite accept Duret’s claims that his emotions are any more profound than a Fobbit’s.

If the narrator is trying to convince through Duret that a secret knowledge of a secret emotion is available only to door-kickers who have a secret experience, we never witness anything that would allow the resulting epistemology primacy over anything a Fobbit knows, feels, or experiences. Duret claims frustration as an emotion unique to door-kicker experience, but no one in the book experiences more of that particular emotion than the Fobbits. Duret will definitely become frustrated by Shrinkle’s poor decision-making, but that pales in comparison to Gooding’s frustrations, an emotion that is excruciatingly reconstructed in an extended scene toward the beginning of the novel.

As part of his job, Gooding meticulously drafts and edits press releases, but his boss meddles with arbitrary edits of one particular memo so long that CNN reports the news first. After working on this memo all morning long, Gooding has to throw it in the trash (57-75).

Duret also assumes that his closeness to death and the uncertainty of his own survival is what exempts him from carrying the Fobbit’s stink. Yet again, however, Gooding comes closer to death and the death of other Americans than any of the door-
kickers. Not only does he nearly bleed to death following a botched IV installation after drinking some bad water (291-307), he is also affected by the death around him more than anyone else. Since he works in public affairs, he is the first step in the onerous system of official notification of the next of kin. He was once a death “virgin,” but now, he says, “death was just one of the commodities he traded on a daily basis” in the form of the notification processes he initiates (9). Death was once an unknown for Gooding; now, it is “a matter of course, one more task in a day already filled with a heavy workload” (12).

Gooding never holds a dying man’s hand or fights off a horde of fanatic insurgents, but neither does Duret. In fact, the one person to describe Duret as an efficient, respected, and scarred commander of door-kickers is, well, Duret. Thus, his repeated statement that he fears nothing more than becoming a Fobbit never convinces us. As the novel continues, we completely discount his perspective while we witness—again and again—a number of Fobbits experiencing the same emotions of despair, fear, and frustration. When two of the younger troops who work in Gooding’s office—both self-proclaimed Fobbits—are sitting guard duty in a tower one evening, their covert lovemaking is interrupted by a mortar attack that barely leaves them alive (5). Do they deserve exemption from the disdain Duret levels a Fobbit’s way? Not a chance, as far as the hierarchy of FOB Triumph is concerned. After all, Gooding had already prefaced this particular story with the announcement, “They were all Fobbits, everyone who worked in this palace” (4).
This includes Duret, though neither Duret nor Gooding ever notes this detail. He even has his own office while the others work in cubicles. We are tempted to see Duret as the rest of the base does, and we are tempted to admire him as the hierarchy demands, but Burke’s methodology allows us to see through the hierarchical psychosis and recognize Duret’s inconsistencies about door-kicker supremacy. We can see what he can not; we can see that what he considers knowledge is really nothing but banal experience reduced to clichés. We can see that his special experience is not all that special, and since nothing he does and nothing he says is courageous or selfless, we are invited to conclude that the distinction between a Fobbit and a door-kicker might be an illusion. Outside of the novel, there may indeed be a special epistemology to be drawn from extreme suffering and trauma, but this is unavailable to self-described warriors like Duret. He thinks he knows something Fobbits don’t, but his secret knowledge is based on self delusions available to all humans. In the end, Duret can only locate his Fobbit-hating in his fear of getting fat, of “his ass spreading” (97) of becoming “pale andarty” (125). But we know that these worries are mere platitudes; in reality, he works in an office exactly like the Fobbits he despises.

After Duret, the reader is given another door-kicker perspective of the Fobbit from Brock Lumley, the guy who actually saves the day during the incident at Intersection Quillpen. There, Lumley, Shrinkle, and Duret are waiting for a robot to defuse the bomb when the suicide bomber stirs to life and reaches for the detonator (38). On cue, Lumley quickly and calmly kills the man with a miraculous 200-yard shot to the
head, and the Americans all go home safe and sound. A lower ranking door-kicker than Duret, but one less obsessed with worries of becoming a Fobbit, Lumley provides a crucial piece of the Fobbit’s fuzzy image. This is the perspective, Abrams seems to say, that we should accept as the least adulterated by bureaucracy and Fobbit self-preservation. After all, during the incident at Intersection Quillpen, he played the role of the cool and collected warrior. However, Lumley’s actions are not exactly heroic, and they certainly aren’t self-sacrificing. He takes his shot from the safety of two hundred yards of distance. Thus, it is difficult to accept his actions as adequate to grant him the highest place in the hierarchy. Yes, his marksmanship is admirable, but it has little to do with the way Gooding and Duret have taught us to conceive door-kicker supremacy.

This scene ultimately serves to place Shrinkle, Duret, and Lumley in their appropriate, but highly arbitrary, places on the scale of Fobbit-ness. Lumley—the enlisted door-kicker—makes the shot and kills the bad guy. He is on top. Duret—the deluded officer door-kicker—sees the suicide bomber wake up, but does nothing; he just freezes, “standing tall but paralyzed with indecision” (38). This, however, doesn’t place him at the bottom because we have Shrinkle—the nervous and incompetent door-kicker who defecates in his pants, “giving himself completely to the dread and terror of close-order combat and releasing the clench on his bowels” (38). The narrator may call this “close-order combat,” but nothing resembling “close-order” or “combat” ever occurs. One shot and a dead suicide bomber is all these door-kickers need to keep the hierarchy in place.
It is from Lumley that we receive our requisite dose of combat gnosticism:

Each time he came back from patrol, driving through the main gate of the FOB, his spleen rose between his teeth at the thought of all the coddled soldiers who never went beyond the wire. Fuck those high-ranking desk jockeys fat, dumb, and happy with their air-conditioning and the illusion they kept things under control in Iraq just by clicking a few icons on the computer screen, moving units around with a tidy drag-and-drop. (41)

In *Permanence and Change*, Burke discusses the “magical” spell that makes people confuse the individual with the status that a hierarchy affords him or her (277). This is the seduction to which Lumley succumbs. As we can see in his rant above, he only speaks in generalities and never has any real complaints about Fobbits other than the air conditioning they enjoy and the unwarranted job satisfaction he assumes they feel. The magical spell of hierarchical psychosis Lumley is under allows him to claim the qualities attached to the status he enjoys, and he can do so—like Duret—without actually displaying courage or seeing combat or without giving the reader any actual reason to join him in his hatred for “fat, dumb, and happy” non-door-kickers. But Lumley’s place is less secure than he thinks. He may have claimed what he considers a rightful seat in his privileged position since he did make an impressive shot, and he did potentially save a number of lives in the process, but Abrams never quite allows him to advance to hero status. This is what the irony of Fobbit-ness illuminates. Lumley is a great marksman, but as the novel progresses, he never becomes more than a self-pitying and unappreciated complainer, traits that differ little from everyone else we meet in the novel. He was calm and collected and decisive in that one moment, yes, but the reader never witnesses an experience or an act that might in any way justify his self-described insight into war.
The spell of the door-kicker runs deep on FOB Triumph. As Burke explains, “We take it for granted, that the pyramidal magic is inevitable in social relations, whereby individuals whether rightly or wrongly, become endowed with the attributes of their office” (279). Or, as Lumley lamely describes his fellow door-kickers, they are all “kick-ass Warriors with a capital W” who are doing the “real work of Operation Iraqi Freedom” (140, 137). If the plot of FOBBIT is any indication, being a “kick-ass Warrior” means driving around Baghdad in a Humvee. Beyond the magical linguistic constructions that keep the hierarchy in place, there is nothing in the novel from which the reader can draw if he or she wishes to follow Lumley’s lead and endow door-kickers with the attributes of their office. There is certainly insufficient information to justify the epistemological privilege their unspecified efforts imply. Lumley’s self-righteousness suggests that being a door-kicker might mean nothing more than indulging in extensive self-pity. We never witness Lumley or his door-kickers kicking any doors.

This brings us back to the line Gooding draws between door-kickers and Fobbits, the one that marks a soldier’s comparable willingness to meet danger. “Let the door-kickers ride around Baghdad,” Gooding exclaims, “in their armor-skinned Humvees getting pelted with rocks from pissed-off hajjis. Let them dodge the roadside bombs that ripped limbs from sockets and spread guts like fiery paste across the pavement” (4). To be sure, Gooding never goes outside the wire, but no door-kickers in this novel ever get their limbs ripped from their sockets or their guts spread anywhere. Fobbits and door-kickers all meet the same hazards. Plus, a number of the “high-ranking desk jockeys” that
Lumley despises actually do go outside the wire, but none of them are exempted from the strictly enforced and vaguely defined code of the Fobbit. When a convoy from another base has to stop alongside a dangerous section of Baghdad highway for a broken-down truck and wait for Lumley and Shrinkle to come to their aid, Lumley describes the officer in charge of the convoy as “another member of the Ass-Pucker Club” (142). This lieutenant is outside the wire; he will probably smell like dust and death after his hazardous drive through Baghdad; worry and fear will probably mark his face. But, still, even he isn’t granted full exemption from being a “softy,” as Lumley describes him (137).

Gooding at least partially recognizes the definite ruptures in the Fobbit code; so he makes an exception that accounts for the “foolhardy officers gunning for promotion who grabbed every opportunity to ride on patrols” (4). These officers are not Fobbits, Gooding clarifies; rather, they are “ghosts” who are “gone outside the wire more often than not” (4). But “ghosts” still can’t carry Lumley’s coveted label of “kick-ass Warrior” because of their concerns with self-promotion: as Gooding sees it, they made “damn sure everyone saw them depart, slurping loud from travel mugs of coffee, uniforms clinking and whickering, a patchwork of 550 cord and carabiners and duct tape” (4). But who’s to say these men are slurping their coffee too loud? Who’s to say these so-called “ghosts” seek promotion and recognition over doing the real work of Operation Iraqi Freedom alongside Lumley and his men? The cynicism associated with Fobbit-hate may be well founded in reality; it may indeed reflect self-promotion and self-preserving trends and
behaviors that are common across the U.S. Army and in Iraq, but in FOBBIT we are never convinced it is anything but cynicism.

**Fobbits Who Don’t Threaten The Hierarchy Need Not Be Purged**

If it is difficult to distinguish Fobbits from non-Fobbits based on Gooding’s, Duret’s, and Lumley’s examples, when we finally get to Lieutenant Colonel Eustace “Stacie” Harkleroad, we are given a perfect candidate for complete Fobbit-ness. No character has fully qualified for the disdain the label contains; so we almost exhale with relief at Harkleroad’s cartoon presence. He fits all definitions. A less-dangerous “Gomer Pyle” from Gustav Hasford’s 1979 novel, Short-Timers (and the film Full Metal Jacket), his characterization is farcical:

Harkleroad was a thick man. Thick in the way a bowl of risen dough is said to be thick. He filled his uniform amply; in truth, there was more flesh than fabric. When he leaned back in his chair, other soldiers flinched, afraid a button would pop off, come flying across the room, and put out an eye. (60)

He is obese. He suffers chronic, spontaneous nosebleeds, and every other soldier he meets hates him. His superiors repeatedly call him a “doofus” (64), as do the troops he is supposed to lead. Harkleroad is deaf in one ear from the time, years earlier, when he wandered too close to an artillery piece during training (62). In the public affairs office he runs, his second-in-command, a major, calls him “Harklefuck” and dreams often of how Harkleroad might meet “his death in any number of abrupt, violent ways” (84).

However annoying he is as an officer, what marks Harkleroad as most deserving of the rudeness and cruelty directed at him on FOB Triumph are the false claims he
makes in his door-kicker-modeled emails he sends home to his mother. These are, as the narrator describes them, “half-truths Stacie Harkleroad kneaded and pulled like Silly Putty” (62). When the four door-kickers die while eating at the Burger King, Harkleroad tells his mother that he ran into the carnage and saved lives, an act he compares to “Clara Barton on the battlefield” (119). Later, he completely fabricates a story about militants assaulting the FOB. According to this story, Harkleroad claims that he grabbed a weapon and ran to meet the assault with hand-to-hand combat, only to be pulled away by his superior: “So there you have it Mother—my bravery has once again been thwarted by my duty as a Public Affairs Officer . . . Oh the damage I could have inflicted on those blasted Sunnis!” (236).

David Lawrence suggests that the immodest or false brandishing of one’s combat bonafides is what Abrams seeks to expose with the novel’s satire (163). Certainly, this is a safe analysis, and it is the one that Abrams likely intended with his construction of Harkleroad. As Lawrence puts it, “it’s the soldiers committed to self-promotion over selflessness who find themselves in Abrams crosshairs” (163). Abrams explains:

For Fobbits—the ones who rarely go outside the wire—life can be comfortable, safe and mundane. The war is always “out there,” far removed from their daily lives—a distant thing that both annoys and frightens them . . . These are the guys who’ll be spinning yarns down at the American Legion bar in years to come. The guys who were out there in the real shit, facing the real bullets and grenades, they won’t talk about it much. (163)
While I take considerable issue with Abrams’ generality in that final sentence,\textsuperscript{49} as far as Harkleroad is concerned, Abrams’ point can be well-taken. Clearly, the reader is supposed to read his fabrications with disgust and use them as adequate grounds to place him on the bottom rung of FOB Triumph’s hierarchy. However, Harkleroad’s made-up stories of bravado serve to show the difficulty of maintaining the hierarchy of door-kickers and Fobbits. Yes, embellishing past combat experience is one of the most despised things a military veteran can do.\textsuperscript{50} However, just as Abrams’ novel doesn’t give us any examples of door-kickers who were “in the real shit,” his narrative also never gives us any proof that any character in the novel is aware Harkleroad fabricates a single thing. These are harmless emails that he sends home to his mother. Abrams may personally subscribe to the popular notion that “real” veterans of combat mutely stare into their beers at the American Legion, and he may \textit{intend} us to count Harkleroad as one

\begin{flushright}
\textsuperscript{49} Even Abrams seems to be under a bit of hierarchical psychosis regarding combat and noncombat experience. The historical record is full of combat veterans who were “in the real shit” and still couldn’t avoid the “allure of mendacity,” to borrow Lawrence’s phrase (165).
\end{flushright}

\begin{flushright}
\textsuperscript{50} In May of 2013, President Obama signed into law the “Stolen Valor Act,” a law that levies fines and up to a year of imprisonment for making fraudulent claims about military service. Of course, it is designed for civilians who make such claims. Still, even when one rightfully wears a war medal (as John Kerry once did), the slightest suggestion that a decoration is unearned can result in astounding public rage. In 1996, the highest-ranking officer in the U.S. Navy, Admiral Jeremy Boorda, stepped out his front door and shot himself in the chest after questions rose in the media regarding his eligibility to wear two “V” devices on his dress uniform (the V stands for Valor). The Navy later proved that he was rightfully wearing the devices (Shenon 1).
\end{flushright}
who sits nearby “spinning yarns,” but the novel doesn’t support any suggestion that this is why the people FOB Triumph detest him. He is never more than a cartoon buffoon.

So why, one may wonder, is Harkleroad not the convenient scapegoat of this hierarchy? The reason is because he, like the others, fits well within the Fobbit structure. He never does anything more than play the clown or fool’s role, and thus he offers little more than comic relief. Since he doesn’t threaten the hierarchy, his role can stand. Indeed, one of the reasons why the reader doesn’t start rooting for or pitying Harkleroad is because we are privy to his lies. He most certainly doesn’t contribute to or take part in the loathing that is inherent to the hierarchical structure of Fobbits and door-kickers. Also, unlike all the others, he never—not once—discusses Fobbits. While his manufactured stories show the reader that Harkleroad is well aware of the higher levels of respect paid to the combat experienced soldier, he never shows disdain for anyone who works in an office as he does. He may covet the stories of door-kickers, but he never puts them on a pedestal where they can be admired. The reader may have little patience for Harkleroad’s shenanigans, but the door-kickers just despise him for having what they see is an easy job while the other Fobbits dislike him because he’s more Fobbity than they.

From his position at the very bottom, Harkleroad holds up the entire hierarchy because he is its most oblivious patron. This is why the hierarchy must spare him. Door-kickers and Fobbits alike need him in order to measure and secure their own place on the Fobbit-ness scale. He is despised and ridiculed, but the disdain others feel for him never develops into a need for quarantine; there always remains insufficient incentive for his
victimage. Throughout, he is nothing more than a type. As FOBBIT’s narrator tells us, “On every Army division staff there is always at least one officer who is the object of pity and/or ridicule” (64). There is also one in nearly every American war novel. His claiming of experiences and emotions that are reserved for the door-kicker may deepen the reader’s lack of empathy, but he is no threat to door-kickers or Fobbits. He would make a most inconvenient scapegoat.

Were Harkleroad to publish his tales in the Murfreesboro Free Press (as he keeps hinting to his mother that he might do some day), the entire hierarchy would be susceptible to exposure and collapse. But this never happens. The same goes for Gooding, who is able to fantasize about death during an attack on FOB Triumph and remain equally harmless to the FOB’s social order. When Gooding walks through a bazaar and sees scraps of metal and scarves and fake silverware once owned by Saddam Hussein, he says, “It is here that Fobbits can buy the false souvenirs that will later corroborate the equally false stories of their adventures ‘outside the wire’” (53). No Fobbits actually do this, and so this is one more thing that does little to distinguish them from door-kickers. Besides, we are never convinced that the door-kickers in this novel refrain from doing the same thing. It definitely feels like something Lumley would do.

When Gooding nearly bleeds to death following his botched IV installation, he looks down at the blood drops on his boots:

> When he returned to Georgia, maybe he could wear the uniform into the local American Legion and it would get him a few free beers from all the old battle-scarred veterans sitting at the bar. “Hey, look who’s here,” they’d say, “Rambo from Iraq.” (307)
Again, this is nothing more than the conditional musings of a man with blood on his boots. After all, these imaginary “battle-scarred veterans” are quite comfortable with whatever imagined story accompanies the actual bloodstains. At a minimum, the sarcasm in that line—“Rambo from Iraq”—suggests that it probably doesn’t matter whether or not a Fobbit like Gooding explains the marks on his uniform with the truth. These guys can see right through it. That, or it is a good enough story that they simply don’t care. As long as the hierarchy is in place, a foolish Fobbit’s story has no ability to supplant combat gnosticism, nor can any fabrication upset the hierarchical psychosis that keeps the door-kicker on top. That role, that danger, only exists in the form of Abe Shrinkle.

*Abe Shrinkle and the Hierarchical Embarrassment of Fobbit-ness*

From the other characters we can see that none of them deserve any exemption from the hierarchical psychosis that drives both Gooding’s self-loathing or Lumley and Duret’s self-congratulation. Duret and Lumley fall prey to the hierarchical psychosis because they mark themselves at the top of it. Gooding and Harkleroad acquiesce to it because they are at its bottom. All, however, share the assumption that the direct experience of combat discomfort and combat fear—however loosely defined these things are—is the only way to know “what is going on in Iraq,” a knowledge that multiple characters claim. Harkleroad’s second-in-command, for instance, says, “They have no clue what it’s like out there. But I know. I’ve been outside the wire every week. I could tell them a thing or three, the clueless fucks” (243). By the time Abe Shrinkle is fully
sacrificed to the hierarchy, it is clear that every single character in this novel could qualify as a “clueless fuck.” Regular, Fobbit-styled awareness of death, fear, and discomfort doesn’t count as an epistemology to be respected, considered, or counted as part of this war at all. Still, as we have seen, the door-kickers who repeatedly proclaim that they know exactly what is going on in Iraq have nothing more to add to a collective understanding of this absurd war than do the Fobbits who never leave their air-conditioned offices. For this reason, a scapegoat is required to keep the hierarchy of Fobbit-ness in place.

Hierarchies like the one on FOB Triumph are extremely resilient, for, as Burke writes in *A Rhetoric of Motives*, “the hierarchic principle is indigenous to all well-rounded human thinking” (141). But they are also extremely vulnerable, as Burke says: “hierarchy is inevitable,” but “this is not to say, that any particular hierarchy is inevitable; the crumbling of hierarchies is as true a fact about them as their formation” (141). All the characters of *FOBBIT* display the mystical nature of the criteria that cloaks the divisions within the hierarchy of Fobbits and door-kickers, and each occupies a position on the sliding scale of Fobbit-ness. Shrinkle, however, is the one who doesn’t properly fit anywhere. He is both inside and outside the ordered world of Fobbits and door-kickers. This is what Burke’s scapegoat mechanism and Shrinkle, the door-kicker cum Fobbit, reveal in Abrams’ novel. In order for the hierarchy to be reinforced—as it most certainly is in *FOBBIT*—there must be a release for the tension caused by the untenable class
structure that keeps Fobbits and door-kickers separated. For the hierarchy to survive, there must be a purging, and it must be affected at the expense of a convenient scapegoat.

In *Dramatism and Development*, Burke discusses the term “identification” as it applies to his theory of “congregation by segregation” (28-29). “Identification,” he says, “involves the working of antithesis, as when allies who would otherwise dispute among themselves join forces against a common enemy” (28). When the soldiers of FOB Triumph say, “we are at war,” the pronoun “we” doesn’t include the full population of the base, and “war” does not indicate a state-sponsored conflict against an armed insurgency. If the American soldier *par excellence* is the combat-experienced door-kicker (our god-term at the top of this particularly ordered world), and the Fobbit is the despised but necessary functionary at its bottom, the only available option for an enemy is Abe Shrinkle, since he manages to be consubstantial with both door-kickers and Fobbits and he manages to be unwelcomed by both groups. We can see that the enemy in *FOBBIT* is not the Sunni militant or the faceless, identity-free hajji; it is anything that threatens to dismantle the system of Fobbits and door-kickers. And through Shrinkle’s abject status, we can see that not only is the border between Fobbits and door-kickers a tenuous one indeed, but we can also see (after he fails three times) that he is unfit for a place anywhere within the hierarchy’s pyramidal structure. Again, it is for this that he must be purged, and it is through his construction as this drama’s ultimate scapegoat that the inherent problems in a world so ordered are laid bare.
Shrinkle starts the novel as a door-kicker, but after his failures and crimes, he is relegated to life as a Fobbit. This backslide, from combat door-kicker status into a full-blown Fobbit and then, finally, into obliteration, is an interesting one to track. For one, Shrinkle’s ejection from the hierarchy serves to remind the other soldiers that it is crucial that they continue subscribing to the order from which Shrinkle is cast out. Shrinkle’s actions threaten to make Fobbits of every other door-kicker in the novel, so his unfitness as a door-kicker or as a Fobbit highlights how a door-kicker’s status truly has nothing to do with door-kicker behavior, door-kicker bravery, or door-kicker knowledge. No, his expulsion exposes a ritualistic cycle of action-guilt-purgation-redemption that fulfills a collective American need to engage in hero-worship that encourages waves of teenagers to sign up for service in a military peopled by an all-volunteer force.

Shrinkle is never good at his job, but at least in the beginning of the novel he is safe from being called a Fobbit, and during the initial phases of his deployment, he fulfills all requirements to achieve door-kicker status, at least according to the reasons Duret, Gooding, and Lumley give us. He is willing—even eager—to die for his country, but a series of decisions drive him back inside the wire and into Fobbit-dom. During this transition, we learn something important about Shrinkle and why he is ultimately found unfit for membership in FOB Triumph’s hierarchy: as the narrator tells us, “Abe hoped he would never become so callous, so unpatriotic, so . . . so Fobbity” (196, ellipses and emphasis original). This statement is an extremely important one. In it, we can see the nature of the threat that Shrinkle poses for the hierarchy, and that lies in the fact Shrinkle
is the only character to link the vague concepts of patriotism and nationalism to the hierarchy. As Burke says, “How can one better picture an issue in an appealing light than by showing that people were willing to be destroyed on behalf of it?” (*Permanence* 196).

Shrinkle’s comment comes during a crucial scene in the novel when Shrinkle meets Gooding for the first time, when his door-kicker status at FOB Triumph is in flux. Poolside at an American airbase in Qatar, the scene displays the extent of the hierarchical psychosis and its extensive effects on both Fobbits and door-kickers alike:

“I’m in division public affairs” [Gooding says].

“Oh, so you’re one of those Fob—” Abe caught himself, “—uh, people who work at the palace.”

“You can go ahead and say it: yes, I’m a Fobbit.”

“You act like it’s a bad thing.”

“To most people it is. But not to me.”

“Oh, why’s that?”

He leveled a flat gaze at Abe. “I’m still here, aren’t I? Lot of door kickers can’t say the same.” (195)

Following that logic, being a Fobbit most certainly isn’t a “bad” thing. But according to Shrinkle, Fobbit-ness violates the most sacrosanct ethic of American military service. That is, for Shrinkle, a Fobbit is a Fobbit not because he fails to meet danger in combat—as I pointed out above, *none of *FOBBIT’s characters ever see combat—a Fobbit is a Fobbit because he isn’t a patriot. He doesn’t love his country enough.

Though Shrinkle and Gooding situate themselves on opposite sides of the Fobbit divide, neither one can see that they are equals and that they are both sitting on the side of
a pool, a rather Fobbit-like action. Gooding and Shrinkle are disinclined to interrogate the ordered world of Fobbits and door-kickers any further, but the reader is essentially dared to do so. Gooding is reading *Catch-22*, and when Shrinkle sees the book, he dismisses it, as a door-kicker should, as “classic antiwar rhetoric” (194). As Shrinkle remembers it, one of his old professors at West Point had “gone on a vein-throbbing rant against ‘that ass-clown Yosarian,’ who spent the entire book trying to weasel his way out of his patriotic duty” (194). Of course, Shrinkle has never read Heller’s novel. We, however, know that in *Catch-22*, Yosarian wanted nothing more than to be a Fobbit, and so this concept of “patriotic duty”—what Shrinkle’s equates with being pro-war, with being a door-kicker, with willingly sacrificing oneself in the line of duty—is the most salient aspect of this hierarchy’s shaky foundation.51

Gooding plays along, saying that he “can’t think of a better time to read” *Catch-22*, that it “helped to get [his] perspective skewed in the right direction,” and that it is “sort of like an owner’s manual for this war” (194). However, by this, Gooding merely means that the novel “skewed” his perspective so that he could cynically assess bureaucracy’s place in war, not his place in the military. What Gooding and Shrinkle both

51 When asked about this reference to *Catch-22*, Abrams responded: “I’ll admit that *Catch-22* was an influential book on *FOBBIT* . . . [it] was both an inspiration and a burden. It was like the proverbial elephant in the room—I knew it was there, but I tried not to look at it. I gave Heller’s novel a cameo in my novel as a sort of homage, a tip-of-the-hat to the master. That’s the only reason I mentioned *Catch-22* in that swimming pool scene. Unfortunately, some critics thought I was using it as a semaphore to send a message that I was trying to compare myself with a classic. I have very few regrets about how the book turned out, but if I could go back and do it all over again, I would take out that reference to *Catch-22*” (Lawrence 167-168).
miss is the fact that Yosarian would never fit within their hierarchy. They are both, as Burke would say, “yearning to conform with” what they consider the very “sources of [their] being” (Permanence 69). By FOB Triumph’s definition of a Fobbit, Yosarian would have been the least Fobbity of them all; he flies dozens upon dozens of combat missions and watches men die around him. Yet, by Shrinkle’s view of Fobbit behavior, Yosarian is a disgrace because Yosarian does everything he can to avoid flying more combat missions. As far as Shrinkle is concerned, what makes him an “ass clown,” then, is not the level of danger he actually meets while completing his “patriotic duty,” it is the willingness he displays before and after doing so. Ironically, neither Shrinkle nor Lumley nor Duret ever come close to accumulating a level of combat experience anywhere close to Yosarian’s.

After this conversation, both Gooding and Shrinkle return to FOB Triumph, and after Shrinkle is pulled off his team of door-kickers, he is made to stand in the base gym and hand out towels while the rest of the base waits for the scapegoat mechanism to be completed. Burke describes this phase of Shrinkle’s descent into scapegoat worthiness:

So we watch, in the structural analysis of the symbolic act, not only the matter of ‘what equals what,’ but also the matter of ‘from what to what.’ And we detect, under various guises, the abandonment of an old self, in symbolic suicide, parricide, or prolicide. (Philosophy 38)

Despite his own best efforts, Shrinkle initially becomes everything he despises in a Fobbit. But once he is there, he actually starts to enjoy his new self and his new relationship with the war and the rest of FOB Triumph. This abandonment of his old door-kicker identity announces, however, the important characteristics that need analysis
in the other door-kickers. And in that analysis, ruptures again appear in the dominant narrative of the Fobbit hierarchy.

We dislike Shrinkle along with all the other grunts and Fobbits, but we also want to empathize with him, to understand his fears and his motivations. Thus, any questioning of Shrinkle’s status simultaneously reflects the status of the subject. In other words, whatever makes the abject other different is really a reflection of the creating subject, not the quarantined object. Burke, in *A Grammar of Motives*, calls this the “dialectic of the scapegoat”:

> For the scapegoat is “charismatic,” a vicar. As such, it is profoundly consubstantial with those who, looking upon it as a chose vessel, would ritualistically cleanse themselves by loading the burden of their own iniquities upon it. Thus the scapegoat represents the principle of division in that its persecutors would alienate from themselves to it their own cleanliness. For one must remember that a scapegoat cannot be “curative” except insofar as it represents the iniquities of those who would be cured by attacking it. In representing *their* iniquities, it performs the role of vicarious atonement (that is, unification, or merger, granted to those who have alienated their iniquities upon it, and so may be purified through its suffering). (406)

As I point out above, Harkleroad and Gooding never threaten any subject on FOB Triumph since they are so securely ensconced within the order. And, as we’ve seen, the wide possible range of Fobbit-ness means that anyone can carry a Fobbit’s stink without deserving victimage. Shrinkle, however, can most certainly disturb the hierarchy because he “represents” the “iniquities” of the order.

From the opening of the novel, the dialectic of the scapegoating mechanism loads Shrinkle up with curses. We first meet him through Duret’s eyes, back when Shrinkle was still part of the clan of door-kickers, and it is clear that Shrinkle is doomed. He is
marked for removal from the clan since Duret sees him not as a peer but as “a pinch-faced captain named Shrinkle, known for his hems and haws” all while Duret does his fair share of hemming and hawing (20). Carter explains:

At one moment the chosen victim is a part of the clan, being one of their number; a moment later it symbolizes something apart from them, being the curse they wish to lift from themselves. By the operation of dialectical change, they first identify with their victim; then they deny a connection altogether. (18)

Plus, his name perfectly suits him for the role; it looks like a junk food cupcake but sounds like the nickname of a pet bunny. Shrinkle is an easy target.

Duret’s narration delivers all early characterization of Shrinkle, so the comparison between the two is clearly loaded in Duret’s favor. Indeed, since we have no reason to distrust Duret’s perspective (yet), the hierarchy as he describes it actually makes perfect sense because, compared to Duret’s self-described stoic leadership, we have Shrinkle, a young man who looses control of his bowels. We momentarily accept Duret as the perfect example for how a good door-kicker acts and thinks, and we somewhat ignore the fact that Duret, too, had a similarly debilitating reaction to the same situation at Intersection Quillpen. Duret is allowed the chance to hide his own incontinence with the imprecision of euphemisms and clichés while Shrinkle is not. For example, when Duret arrives at the incident at Intersection Quillpen, he says, “solving this situation would be like trying to stuff eels into a can of grease. It could be done, but you had to know how to hold the eel” (21). Shrinkle is never afforded any similar assessment of his own reactions, nor is he allowed a chance to distract the reader with witticisms like Duret’s. Thus, we are only allowed to look at him as Duret does, as an object to be despised and hated.
Duret claims that he has to solve the situation that Shrinkle—a “pale, visibly shaking captain”—created (21). He marches up to Shrinkle and tells him, “we don’t have time for this wiffly-waffly bullshit” (21). Lumley overhears the haranguing and jumps on the Shrinkle-hating bandwagon. As Duret speaks, Lumley thinks to himself, “They (meaning, he, Lumley) could have handled this, if they were allowed” (22). As the scene at Intersection Quillpen develops, Shrinkle’s “abjectification” continues, and he is never described with anything but disdain, even when he performs well. He calls in the bomb disposal team without being prompted, but they arrive without his notice, and, predictably, Lumley jumps in and ingratiates himself with Duret by eagerly reporting the team’s arrival (24). When Shrinkle dares to make a suggestion to a visibly angry Duret, Duret wishes that he could “tell his captain that he was a well-meaning but ultimately useless officer who couldn’t find his asshole with a flashlight and a road map” (31). When Shrinkle breathes, his intake is “quivery” (23). When he swallows, Duret describes it as a “dry click” (26, emphasis originat). When he talks, his voice has “a little seesaw in it” (30). As Duret confidently concludes, Shrinkle is “clearly a man out of his element” (21).

So, initially, we agree with Duret, but once we dismantle the hierarchy and peer through Duret’s clumsy language and Lumley’s eager self-concern, we can see that Shrinkle’s mistake was appearing to hesitate; the rest of the complaints are unfortunate personality traits that have zero impact on the actual war. He may have been indecisive, but Shrinkle’s hesitation actually resolves the situation and results in the death of only
one man, the car-bomber. Does it really matter how he swallows? Shrinkle doesn’t fail as a door-kicker because civilians die or because a suicide bomber kills American soldiers or because a battle is lost; Shrinkle fails because he doesn’t add to the prestige of door-kickers. He isn’t a threat to American lives or to the American military mission in Iraq; he is a threat to the hierarchy because he shows how door-kickers stay on top, by doing nothing more that appearing as if they belong there.

After the incident at Intersection Quillpen, Shrinkle tries to fix his demeanor and appear as a door-kicker should, but he overcompensates. Instead of performing his job, he tries to act like one would if they were following his concept of patriotic duty. Shrinkle is still in command of Lumley and the rest of the door-kickers when he and his men are called out to a local gas station. A mysterious Iraqi man is walking around in circles and making odd noises, all while wearing a ski parka and a “jester’s hat” (114). Or, as Lumley describes the situation, “Some hajji fool walking around a gas station making like he’s going to do something. They want us to go out and monitor” (109). Lumley and the other enlisted door-kickers try to leave Shrinkle at the FOB, but he insists on going along, and yet again he gets in the way of door-kickers being door-kickers. Better yet, he acts like a door-kicker when such behavior is in no way necessary. As Shrinkle considers his options, he worries about doing “his part in the war” and about how nice it would be to report to his future children that “he’d killed the enemy” (113). So Shrinkle takes out his pistol and murders the man: “the heavy man crumpled to the ground, arms spread in a Y above his head, the jester’s cap giving on last surge of bell music when it hit the
ground” (113-114). But the dead man was no enemy; he was a mentally challenged adolescent who had wandered away from his Baghdad home.

This is Shrinkle’s second failure, but this time, since a murder was involved, one would expect Lumley or Duret to respond by arresting Shrinkle as a criminal. But as far as they are concerned, the murder is irrelevant. As Lumley sees it, this particular situation called for the opposite action of the incident at Intersection Quillpen. Then, Shrinkle chose to wait for help, which ended up being the right move. This time, however, Shrinkle acts too quickly, against Lumley’s advice. This is Shrinkle’s real crime. Lumley tells him politely that the appropriate action is to wait for “critical mass to arrive” (112). “We wait, sir,” Lumley insists (112). But in his zeal to act according to the way he thinks a patriotic door-kicker should act, Shrinkle walks up to the man and shoots him in the head with his pistol. Again, it’s worth repeating that Shrinkle is never charged with a crime. Clearly, the hierarchy on FOB Triumph is based on things less concrete than wartime action.

Shrinkle’s final failure comes when a U.S. convoy is forced to stop for a broken-down truck in a hazardous stretch of Baghdad highway. Shrinkle and Lumley are called out one more time with their team of door-kickers (Duret is in his office in the palace for both the murder at the gas station and for this scene as well). This time, Lumley doesn’t offer his advice or his rifle. He just sits back and lets Shrinkle fail for the third time. Actually, he helps him fail. A restless crowd forms at the scene; so Shrinkle decides to again act like a patriotic door-kicker, and he destroys the truck with a thermite grenade so
the convoy can keep moving. Lumley is the man who hands him the grenade after offering a meek protest: “Sir,” he says, “I really don’t think this is a good—” (145). However, the narrator sardonically announces, “Lumley and his squad had no choice but to follow” (147). When all the Americans leave, the truck keeps burning, and the local fire department puts it out, but they also find the body of a dead Iraqi man beneath the truck (134).

One might suggest that Lumley’s protests in all three of Shrinkle’s failures are extended commentary on the rank structure of the military or the suggestion that the enlisted men, were they listened to and allowed to act as they would choose to act, would solve every situation masterfully. However, Shrinkle’s crimes and failures don’t resonate as complaints about rank; rather, they fuel the grudge Lumley comes to hold against Shrinkle. They fuel his fittingness as a scapegoat. During the incident involving the burning truck, Lumley is more concerned with his hierarchical reputation than he is with Shrinkle’s negligence. As he says, he and the other door-kickers enjoyed “a legacy stretching back to doughboys that needed to be preserved and upheld . . . You couldn’t just let bravery like that get tarnished by one indecisive officer who didn’t know shit from Shinola” (140). Lumley’s response to Shrinkle’s incompetence and crimes shows us that the door-kicker status is one based on legacies, stereotypes, and reputations, mystical contributions to an order that Shrinkle misunderstands. These misconceptions make “it harder and harder” for Lumley “to mask his contempt for Shrinkle” (141). Shrinkle has our contempt too, but Lumley’s scorn is not based on the concrete facts of Shrinkle’s
actions, which would have been entirely reasonable (remember, he killed two people and burned up a perfectly good truck). He hates Shrinkle and wants him quarantined because Shrinkle is a contagion that could potentially damage the door-kickers’ collective reputation. Luckily for us, the scapegoating of Shrinkle will allow throw “light” on Lumley’s “practices of ostracism” (“On Carthasis” 352). It doesn’t take long either; as Lumley reflects long before Shrinkle is cast out from their midst, “Shrinkle was already a ghost, a nothing man on his way out” (140).

If Shrinkle threatens Lumley and the legacy of the door-kicker with his ill-conceived door-kicker behavior and demeanor, his failures threaten Duret more. That is, he can turn Duret into more of a Fobbit than he already is, something Duret fears above all else. We taste that fear as Duret sits in his own office in the palace, just down the hall from Gooding and Harkleroad, a place he describes as his “refuge,” a place that provides him a “little pool of silence” (125, 126). From this safest of perches, he learns of Shrinkle’s escapades, and, like Lumley, he doesn’t worry about the dead civilians or the burned truck at all. Instead, he begins to worry about how this “fuck-a-roo of all fuck-a-roos” will reflect back on him (151). He goes so far as to vow “that he’d self-ventilate with a 9mm before he ever let” the Army chain of command turn him into a more obvious Fobbit (126).

By this point in the novel, however, Abrams has provided a number of opportunities for the reader to note that Duret is oblivious to his own status as a Fobbit. Thus, we are not at all surprised when Duret fails to respond to Shrinkle’s crimes with
anything but self-concern. Shrinkle’s behavior is, as far as Duret is concerned, an annoyance—“like a popcorn husk caught between” his molars—but he still has the potential power to unseat Duret from his place of superiority as the lead door-kicker (127). So, predictably, Duret doesn’t ponder the effect that Shrinkle’s actions will have on the war or the local population. As Burke explains, “ostracism, we might say, attempt[s] to solve the problem of ‘hubris’ by amputating from the body politic whatever member seemed swollen to the point of becoming a threat” (“On Catharsis” 352).

Accordingly, Duret covers his own back by simply ordering Shrinkle’s expulsion from the door-kicker clan.

Even then, Duret waffles in the execution of such a simple and justifiable move. When Shrinkle murders the “short-bus hajji”—as Lumley describes the dead, intellectually disabled boy (141)—Duret makes a grand, but empty, pronouncement to the other door-kickers. “Don’t worry, gentlemen,” he declares, “By this time tomorrow, Abe Shrinkle will be shitting out of two assholes. I’ll be ripping him a new one today as soon as I get done here” (135). This never actually happens though. When Shrinkle burns the truck and the Iraqi hiding underneath it, another vague euphemism describes Shrinkle and his impact on Duret: “This particular company commander was starting to feel like a hot poker rammed up Duret’s pecker” (151). Such ridiculous language may work wonders with maintaining Duret’s door-kicker status with the residents of FOB Triumph, but it falls flat with us. We know these are meaningless idioms that Duret and the narrator use to mask Duret’s Fobbit-ness and the inherent problems in the military’s hierarchy.
Duret apparently begins “agonizing” over the “Shrinkle problem,” but this agony has nothing to do with the way Duret might judiciously, legally, administratively, or responsibly deal with a crime that was committed by one of his men (151). The “Shrinkle problem” only refers to the threat he poses to Duret’s status as a door-kicker. Duret doesn’t charge Shrinkle with murder or negligent manslaughter or for destroying military property, nor does he reprimand him in any formal way (150). Paperwork or any other formal device of accountability would reflect too poorly on Duret’s anti-Fobbit door-kicker ethic. So, instead, he uses all the tools in the Fobbit self-preservation toolbox in order to avoid the “shitball” that he suspects is “already headed his way” (152).

Duret claims that he isn’t “one of those grease-fingered Fobbits who let bad things fall slick out of their hands for someone else to catch before they hit the floor” (151), but we know better, and, in the end, this is exactly what he does. He “pulls a fast one” (as he puts it) by giving Shrinkle a Fobbit’s job in order “to make it look like he, Vic Duret, was the first one to make a move” (152). First, he sends Shrinkle to Qatar for a week so he can “stifle the noise of this incident” (153), and then he fires Shrinkle from his door-kicking job as to “make a big show of cleaning house” (152). When Duret’s scheme is complete, so too is Shrinkle’s abjection. He has been safely quarantined away from the rest of the FOB. The hierarchy has been repaired, and Duret and Lumley’s delusions regarding their place of superiority are restored, undamaged and unquestioned.
Shrinkle’s Exile

Shrinkle is exiled, first to Qatar for a purgatorial rest and relaxation break, and then to what he considers the ultimate demeaning job: handing out towels at the fitness center in a polo shirt and khaki shorts. Stripped of rank and uniform, all outward signs of his place in the hierarchy are gone. The social order of FOB Triumph is intact, but Duret’s plan has left the scapegoating mechanism unfinished, as is any self-reflection Shrinkle might undergo regarding his actions. As the narrator reports, “Abe still had not been able to completely exorcise the guilt of that night when, it was alleged, he’d barbecued an Iraqi to death” (174). The dramatistic unity of the novel, therefore, must be maintained with Shrinkle’s vicarious victimage. Even Shrinkle imagines the various ways this might happen. As he wallows in worry and “the early onset of PTSD,” Shrinkle spends all of his free time in his room among piles and piles of the care packages he hoards (174). There, he can’t stop thinking about the “UCMJ, relief for cause, court-martial, execution by firing squad” (175). All of these would be reasonable punishments for what he has done in Iraq, but since Duret shirks his responsibility in favor of maintaining the hierarchy, none of these ever come to fruition. So when we find out that Shrinkle will be spared punishment beyond his demotion, we know a further purging is imminent.

Burke describes the steps a drama must follow in order to “perfect” a character’s role as the scapegoat:

Given the vast complexities of the modern world, it would be hard to find a “perfect” material victim for any of our ills. But because the principle of
a “perfect” victim is so implicit in the very concept of victimage, and because men have so “natural” or spontaneous a desire for a “perfect” view of their discomforts, they are eager to tell themselves of victims so thoroughgoing that the sacrifice of such offerings would bring about a correspondingly thoroughgoing cure. The “fragmentary” nature of the enemy thus comes to take on the attributes of an absolute. *(Permanence 293)*

We only knew Shrinkle, initially, through Duret and Lumley, but once he is exiled, we are finally allowed a glimpse into his background, into his “fragmentation,” and so we witness how easy it is for him to misconstrue the differences between door-kickers and Fobbits. Early on in his life, Shrinkle fell prey to the typical national myths of American identity, the same ones that led him to suggest that Fobbits lack a proper sense of patriotism. Shrinkle is no philosopher or thinker, though. As a boy, Shrinkle thoughtlessly memorized the preamble to the constitution and the entire Declaration of Independence without really paying attention to the words or their meaning (77). As a teenager, he displayed his healthy American work ethic by mowing yards in order to prove his physical mettle and dependability (78). As a college student, he was convinced of “the absolute moral superiority of his Army, his country, and his role in both” (79).

This all it takes to create an adult who subscribes wholeheartedly to the metanarrative of American exceptionalism: “He loved America, he really did—purple mountains majesty and the whole nine yards. He believed there were no finer bedrock principles of government than the ones founded by those powder-wigged Philadelphia fathers all those centuries ago” (77). A true believer in “America at large,” as the narrator puts it, what else is such an American named Abe Lincoln to do but join the Army like his grandfather and his uncles and eagerly do his “patriotic duty” (78)?
As Burke explains, a tragic set up like this one, acts in a more “homeopathic” fashion; it seeks to “provide a remedy for the pollution by aggravation of the symptoms under controlled conditions designed to forestall worse ravages of the disease” (“On Catharsis” 352). This is what happens when Shrinkle is quarantined to the fitness center and removed from the hierarchy; the symptoms of his disease are most definitely aggravated:

Abe Shrinkle couldn’t help but think he was now straddling their worlds. Once an armorer (sic) officer, he figured he’d soon be a Fobbit, the crème-center pussies his men constantly despised. Either that or he’d be dead within the month, courtesy of a reluctant but obedient firing squad. (187)

Exiled as he is, forced to straddle the two worlds of the Fobbit and the door-kicker and then forced (momentarily) to question everything he thought was certain about war and service, Shrinkle’s days are numbered. Not only is his uncertain status in the hierarchy untenable, but Shrinkle has also become, as Carter describes the scapegoat, “a fulcrum around which pivot self-justifying identifications and separations” for the rest of the FOB (18). When he was a door-kicker, he thought he knew what it meant to be a patriot and how to be part of his clan. But now, the men from his old company and squad avoid the gym where he works. In the chow hall, they avoid making eye contact (224). Having collected the sins of the flimsy door-kicker order and the inconsistencies of the very system that allows the hierarchical psychosis at FOB Triumph to exist, the boundaries have been redrawn to exclude him.

So Shrinkle, who “had never thought of himself a man of habitual sin,” discards his identity as an American soldier and reinvents himself as a man named Richard
Belmouth, a British contractor “who was there to advise the United States on historical preservation” (226). Complete with a back-story and an accent, Shrinkle “firmly” decides to create this new self at an off-limits pool run by a small group of Australian soldiers who humorously describe spending time at the pool as attending “Prayer Service”:

[Y]es, indeed, he would change his identity and leave the old Abe Shrinkle behind. It was as simple as entering an elevator and watching the doors close in front of him. At once, he was lifted up and away and, with the giddiness of a cold beer, bare breasts (the two eyes of nipples staring at him), and all these new eager friends, he felt that for at least the duration of a false prayer service, he could leave behind the death, stink, and shame of his failure at war. (231)

But, despite this identity-shifting anagnorisis, this backsliding employee of the United States military cannot escape his role as the abject freak that must be destroyed.

Call it poetic justice or blatant contrivance, Abrams’ satire follows Captain Abe Lincoln Shrinkle all the way into his new identity and the amazing, erasing effects it has on his nagging guilty conscience. Before he makes up his new name and new identity, he does admit to a modicum of guilt along with a desire to exorcise it. But neither exorcism nor contrition ever comes, and Shrinkle’s new identity allows him to bury his very real and very reasonable guilt underneath the same old hierarchies that got him to join the Army in the first place. Instead of voicing regret, Shrinkle aligns his own attitude with Duret’s and Lumley’s. That is, instead of accepting his culpability and the duties of his new job at the gym, he pushes it all away by blaming others. His hierarchical psychosis is finally taking shape.

Before, he never said anything malicious about Fobbits, but after his banishment, Shrinkle adopts a door-kicker styled bitterness: “He was angry at the fat Fobbits who had
nothing better to do in this war than waste a half hour standing around waiting for a rinky-dink little fitness center to open” (267-268). There was a moment when Shrinkle thought Duret would court-martial him for his crimes, but when he becomes Richard Belmouth he comforts himself with Lumley-esque self-pity. “It’s not fair, it’s not fair, it’s not fair,” he repeats again and again whenever he thinks about his demotion (268). Instead of acknowledging and atoning for the momentary guilt he rightly feels, Shrinkle now finds it possible to place blame for his in-between status on the second man he killed: “that Iraqi—whoever he was—who’d crawled underneath that fuel truck and started this whole chain of events” (268). Whenever lingering feelings of shame bother him, he resorts to door-kicker name-calling; the “blubber-jiggling Fobbits” haunt his workdays, and the “Fucking hajji” he killed haunts his memories (269). He even manages, astonishingly, to never again spend another minute dwelling on the harmless boy he executed at the gas station.

In all this reinvention and redirection, Shrinkle begins to feel better because he has finally figured out how the hierarchy works: not by acting, but by directing blame elsewhere. He starts thinking that the “barbecued Iraqi” was the “best thing to happen to him,” and he rationalizes that “maybe it was hajji’s time to go and my time to realize I wasn’t cut out for this Army life” (310, emphasis original). He still suffers pangs of guilt, but again, these pangs have nothing to do with his criminal actions as a door-kicker; they are linked with his new place outside the hierarchy: “Duret had removed him from the action, snatched him out of harm’s way, and, though his men—his former men—still
chewed at Abe’s guilty conscience, he had to admit he was thankful” (312, emphasis original). Fully burdened with the guilt of the order he has finally figured out, there is little else to do with a character like Shrinkle than to kill him.

When Shrinkle is literally disintegrated by a mortar while floating in this forbidden swimming pool in the center of FOB Triumph, the filthy purgation of the hierarchy of Fobbits and door-kickers is finally concluded. As Burke explains,

> In his offense [the scapegoat] takes upon himself the guilt of all—and his punishment is mankind’s chastening. We identify ourselves with his weakness (we feel “pity”), but we dissociate ourselves from his punishment (we feel “terror”). The dissociation, however, coexists with the association. We are onlookers but participants. (Attitudes 144-145)

As news of Shrinkle’s death spreads around FOB Triumph, each primary character goes through a ritualistic purging according to this cycle of association/dissociation and the resulting cure that follows it. Gooding drinks some bad water and spends a miserable day and night expelling fluid from every orifice in his body (292). Then, when he seeks medical attention and the rehydration of an IV bag of saline shortly before Shrinkle is killed, he notes that he is purified somewhat because he has finally “shed blood for the first time . . . here in Iraq” (293, emphasis original). Gooding’s diarrhea and bloodletting is matched by Duret’s vomiting when he is asked to identify Shrinkle’s remains inside an “unzipped body bag—a solitary arm, rigor mortis fingers still clutching a can of beer” (351). The recognition of the arm and the man to whom it was once attached drives Duret to the toilet three times. Then, “with some small measure of relief . . . He flushed the toilet” and “stood watching his sour yellow anger swirl down and disappear” (350).
As for Harkleroad, it turns out that Shrinkle is the 2000’th American to die in Iraq; so this buffoon tries to “spin” the news of the man’s death so that Shrinkle’s scandalous death will not occupy such an important place on the long list of the dead. He wants Shrinkle “obliterated” from the news, so he suggests to his boss that they merely pretend that Shrinkle never existed to begin with (337). He is unsuccessful, of course, but as he leaves his boss’s office, with the brief annoyance Shrinkle caused in his life behind him, Harkleroad leaves purgative marks behind him on the marbled hallway: “He left a trail of nose blood that a Twee contractor named Majid would mop up later that night” (339).

Lumley and the other door-kickers are all in the shower when they find out about Shrinkle’s death. Their new commander (Shrinkle’s replacement) barges in and announces, “Men! He’s dead!” (317). “Gone,” the man says, “Obliterated, actually. A terrible, terrible attack at the Australian pool” (320). The door-kickers don’t show sorrow; instead, they “blustered and bluffed their hidden grief with hard, impervious comments as they tiptoed through the murky water” that covers the floor of the shower (321). Some are even happy to hear of the scapegoat’s death, but the narrator insists that most of the door-kickers are “genuinely shocked and saddened” by it, because “no one deserved to be ‘obliterated.’ Not even the worst officer in the United States Army” (322). The drains in this shower clog easily, though. So, as the narrator explains, the door-kickers use squeegees to push the “grayish mix of shampoos, soaps, and body washes—not to mention pubic hair, urine . . . and snot oysters” to the center drain (318). Some of
them are sullied by a momentary tinge of grief, but all of them are washed anew with the news of Shrinkle’s death. The detritus of Shrinkle’s short life as a misguided door-kicker follows their hair, their dirt, and their phlegm—their filth—down the drain.

---

In *Writing War* (2000), Margot Norris points out that the discourse of war has not caught up with modernity. The way we write and conceive of war in language, she suggests, is still fixed within the Hegelian model in which “transcendence” is earned through the individual risking of one’s life (19). The hierarchical psychosis in *FOBBIT* is fixed on the same thing. Norris goes on to ask a question that expresses a sentiment similar to Helen Benedict’s: “Can art overcome its internal constitutive difficulty in addressing the violent, the cruel, and the ugly without transforming it into beauty, without endowing it with aesthetic effects, without arousing pleasure, without bringing to redemption what should be irredeemable” (20). Art and criticism can indeed overcome the problems she identifies, but they need a methodology like Burke’s to prevent redemption when redemption is undeserved. They need criticism to reveal how the ugly and crude must remain ugly and crude. Together, satire and criticism can invoke—instead of pleasure—frustration and exasperation when the subject of art is war.

When we apply Burke’s method to *FOBBIT* and trace the scapegoat mechanism therein, the paradox that exists between the Hegelian model and the changed ethical conditions of modern war emerges as the most important aspect of war experience today. According to Elaine Scarry’s formulation, “the building-in of skill thus becomes in its
most triumphant form, the building-out of consent” (152, emphasis original). In other words, as war’s technology advances, out goes human agency and human risk, at least as far as the “firing” end is concerned. As Scarry points out, it is “at the ‘firing’ end of the weapon that human presence is eliminated: the bodies’ presence at the receiving end is very much required” (152). This is what FOBBIT displays in all its petty ugliness. FOBBIT also shows us that merely putting on a military uniform carries with it a certain promise of risk. Door-kickers may be at the “firing end” of the war in Iraq, but in FOBBIT, human presence only exists at the “receiving end.” The implication remains, then, that it is probably improper to continue applying the old gladiatorial promise of transcendence to any story about modern war.

In his essay on FOBBIT, David Lawrence points out, “uniforms, tax-free wages, and hostile fire pay are just about the only things Fobbits have in common with the true warfighters” (162). At some basic level of unsupported gut instinct, I do not dispute that notion. I also do not intend to suggest that “true warfighters” no longer exist in modern warfare. They might be out there, but I don’t know what they look like, how they act, or where they operate. I know plenty of good soldiers and countless good pilots, but it feels improper to describe any of them with such a label. Tales about the men and women we are to accept as “true warfighters” may dominate the vast body of war fiction, war memoirs, war films, news media, and journalistic accounts of the wars in Iraq and Afghanistan, but like a Fobbit, as soon I think I understand what a “true warfighter” is and does, as soon as one flashes into sight, it disappears just as quickly. At a minimum, I
am certain of one thing: the epistemological worth of one man or one woman’s wartime service cannot be based on the number of bullets he or she dodged or the manner in which he or she went forth to meet them.

Still, at the heart of the novel, I suspect, is the intended message that we should not consider all deployments and all military members as experiential equals. After all, as Burke says, “Hierarchy is inevitable” (Rhetoric 141). But this is what makes Burke’s methodology such an invaluable tool to bring to a book like Abrams’. The novel panders to an audience that is prepared, for whatever reason, to breathlessly praise “door-kickers” as, unquestionably, the “true warfighters” in the war in Iraq. But that, as I have shown, is a dangerous metric. It isn’t dangerous because the men and women who do “kick doors” have nothing to say about war or because we should ignore them. As Burke suggests, the problem is that “vulgarizers,” “epigons,” and “steppers-down” all adapt that experiential source material to their own purposes, purposes that have a vast potential to “influence” mankind (Counter-Statement 70-71). We need to peer through experience so that we can see the hierarchy of combat gnosticism for what it is, an ideology that—in its exclusivity—hinders a full understanding of the forces of culture that make wars like the one in Iraq possible in the first place.

As this analysis proves, FOBBIT levels each character’s experience so that no one story or perspective is privileged over any other. In that leveling, the novel eschews any easy suggestion that the complexities of combat experience can be generalized into one picture or behavior or that any picture that a door-kicker can paint is inaccessible to the
uninitiated. Rather, *FOBBIT* demands that we interrogate the very nature of Fobbit-hating and the widely accepted reasons behind door-kicker-hero-worship as well. The hierarchy of Fobbits and door-kickers, as it is exposed in the novel, suggests that no matter what implicit line separates soldiers, their experiences are actually quite similar. Fobbits may work in air-conditioned cubicles and sleep in air-conditioned trailers, but even the door-kickers have to return to the FOB eventually, and in that moment each one becomes a “U.S. Army employee stationed at a Forward Operating Base.”

This is the beauty of satire like Abrams’ and its appropriateness for a subject as vast as war. The novel may ask us to note again and again the disparities that exist between the hazards a Fobbit faces and those that a door-kicker faces. And—in a number of interviews—Abrams does suggest that he intended his novel to be read according to the model of combat gnosticism. However, as Burke says, “One can mock death, but one cannot mock men in danger of death” (*Counter-Statement* 65). Of contemporary war, *FOBBIT* teaches us, it is sensible to consider all men and women who experience war as sharing equal danger of death so that war can be treated—and avoided—as a way of life instead of being treated as an aberration that can be reduced into digestible tales of heroic combat. Such an observation is an important one to make about war, for as Burke reminds us,

> The hierarchical psychosis (interweaving the social order with the motives of guilt, wonder, adventure, catharsis, and victimage) arises so spontaneously from the social order, it would seem that a free society should emphasize in its secular educational methods the kinds of observation that make the building of hierarchical magic most difficult. (294)
War—according to *FOBBIT*—is not so easily reduced into a single firefight or the explosion of improvised device. Rather, *FOBBIT* suggests that modern war shares much with the petty concerns of any number of American bureaucracies, combat-related or otherwise, and that might be one of the most disturbing things about post 9/11 American war culture.
Chapter Six: Representing *Hajji*: This Generation’s Enemy “Other”

“We” are all here on this side; “the enemy” is over there. “We” are individuals with names and personal identities; “he” is a mere collective entity. We are visible; he is invisible. We are normal; he is grotesque. Our appearances are natural; his, bizarre. He is not as good as we are. (Paul Fussell, *The Great War* 82)

Similar to “charlie” and “gook” and “kraut” and “Jap” from United States’ twentieth century wars, the word *hajji*\(^{52}\) has become the latest epithet for the United States’ enemy Other.\(^{53}\) In some ways, *hajji* is just another iteration of the American habit to devise a slur and use it to describe an enemy, particularly an enemy that is seldom seen or that is rarely identifiable as a martial unit of a recognized nation-state. Much has been written about the large number and various names of the groups that oppose the United

\(^{52}\) Of all the phonetic approximations of the word in English (“hadji,” “hodgie,” “haji,” etc.), *hajji* seems the most common and the closest Anglicized estimation of the word’s Arabic pronunciation. Throughout this chapter, I italicize the word in order to distinguish it from the rest of the text and to highlight its value as a term or epithet (as opposed to an actual person), syntactically speaking. When an alternative spelling is used in a quote, I retain the spelling and style of the original.

\(^{53}\) I use the capitalized “Other” in the sense established by Edward Said in his book *Orientalism* (1979) as an object within the concept of the Western-imagined “Orientalism,” a way of seeing the “Orient” as “eternal, uniform, and incapable of defining itself . . . the Orient is at bottom something either to be feared or to be controlled (by pacification, research and development, outright occupation whenever possible)” (301).
States’ military action in both Iraq and Afghanistan, yet *hajji*’s appropriation and use by American military members to describe them all begs further analysis, especially as it appears in war literature. On the one hand, as Ben Brody points out in his short “dictionary” of recent “U.S. Military Lingo” that he put together for National Public Radio, *hajji* is a “derogatory term for Iraqis, used widely during the Iraq War. A Hajji shop was an Iraqi-run shop on the base, often selling pirated DVDs, or Hajji Discs. Rarely used to describe Afghans” (n. pag.). This is the type of definition that has been accompanying the word in news stories and memoirs and other works of nonfiction since 2003.⁵⁴ From such a simple accounting, any reader could gather a general understanding of the word, especially since it has become ubiquitous in contemporary war literature and war films. Indeed, a definition like this one, in post-9/11 America, is so reasonable—the word, a clever witticism even—as to defy further comment. On the other hand, it barely scratches the surface of *hajji*’s symbolic power. Geography, religion, ethnicity, skin color, culture: all of these determine *hajji*’s application today, yet none of them is an absolute requirement.

This is why Kenneth Burke’s methodology/philosophy is so useful and applicable in *hajji*’s case; the full symbolic power of *hajji* is much more complex than a simple definition might suggest. Joseph Gusfield describes the resilience of Burke’s logology

⁵⁴ For example, Colby Buzzell, in *My War* (2005), includes a section entitled “Hajji Shops” (150) as does Paul Dickson’s updated tome, *War Slang* (2011) (395). I applaud the definition that appears in *War Slang*, for it admits *hajji* is a “blanket racist word for any person of color, usually non-American, in Iraq” (395).
and his dramatistic method in his introduction to *Kenneth Burke: On Symbols and Society*:

It is my contention that Burke’s importance for the sociologist lies not so much in any particular content of any particular part of his writing but in the development of a method, a perspective about perspectives, which is a profound attempt to understand the implications for human behavior of the fact that humans are “symbol-using animals.” It is primarily as a student of language and meaning that Burke’s impact on the social sciences is greatest. (4)

I am no sociologist, nor is this a sociological analysis of *hajji*; regardless, Gusfield’s point is a sound one. Burke was a student of language and meaning, so it is the “symbol” part of the “symbol-using animal” that I seek to examine in *hajji*. If *hajji* reflects a certain perspective on modern war, this chapter assumes a Burkean perspective on that perspective.

In “‘As Usual I Fell on the Bias’: Kenneth Burke’s Situated Dialectic,” Elizabeth Weiser examines the title phrase as the defining characteristic of Burke’s philosophy, one that exhibits his “propensity to situate his arguments across seeming dichotomies” that calls for “engaged intellectual activism of a particularly ambiguous sort, a celebration of multiple perspectives of a kind that often makes the most engaged among us uncomfortable” (134, 135). Thus, like Burke, this chapter also tries to “fall on the bias” and remain above the fray of moral outrage or distracting ethical arguments. Since *hajji* is a real Arabic word, used by Muslims as a title of respect, some users of the word—usually veterans—dispute the word’s pejorative connotations, citing this and a number of other reasons on open forums across the internet. Colby Buzzell, in his blog-turned-book, *My War* (2005), tells of grabbing a digital voice recorder and taking it out to ask “the first
English-speaking Iraqi person [he] could find a couple of questions” (330). Toward the middle of this “interview” with his unit’s interpreter, Buzzell asks, “Is the word Hajji offensive?” The Iraqi interpreter responds:

No. It is not offensive. People who go to Mecca and come back to Iraq, they call them Hajji, as you know the five duties in Islam, one of them is pilgrimage to Mecca. When the person come back from Mecca, that person is a Hajji. (335)

Buzzell knows this already; so he digs deeper: “What about when Americans sometimes use the word Hajji to refer to an Iraqi, is that bad?” The man responds with a simple, “No” (335). While Buzzell does not address the rather suspect circumstances of this “interview” (how else would a cooperative Iraqi interpreter respond in such a situation?), the interpreter’s stance is often the one assumed by those who rebel against any suggestion that hajji is offensive. They take a certain delight in pointing out socio-cultural inconsistencies regarding other American slurs, and they often rest their arguments on the inherent contradiction that exists when a society asks the military to kill a large number of human beings on its behalf but also expects that same military to maintain a lofty correctness in its language.

I dispute neither of these arguments, nor does my work directly enter any debate over the political or ethical implications of hajji’s existence as an epithet. Though I do—emphatically—argue that a word or symbol can be harmful, pejorative, and demeaning without actual injury or a speaker’s awareness of its potential offensiveness, I make no demand regarding the way a soldier should speak or how he or she should view the people he or she chooses to describe as a hajji. As Kenneth Burke insists in Permanence
and Change, “We are not saying that such should be the case. We are simply saying that . . . such is the case” (284). After all, even if an Iraqi interpreter serving with the United States Army insists that he only applies the denotative or traditional sense of the word when an American uses it, the fact remains that the American speaker most certainly did not intend hajji in similar manner. However, because any close examination of a soldier’s behavior—linguistic or otherwise—is often perceived as the enemy of patriotism or of the military in general, any frank discussion can appear blasphemous or disrespectful.

Of this I am aware. As this chapter will show, however, whenever an American serviceman or servicewoman utters hajji, it is a sign-carrier of vast significance. My investigation of the epithet is intended, then, to discover what the sign carries and the ways a consideration of its appearance in contemporary war literature can help us understand the United States’ expectations for the way its wars are fought. As Srinivas Aravamudan writes, “War can truly be prevented only when we mitigate its background conditions” (1512). Hajji grows out of the (linguistic) background conditions that Americans use to justify sending other Americans off to kill and die. Some readers may take this project as an affront to some supposed sanctity within the military-civilian contract, but if we conceive of the military as just another mouthpiece of the society it represents, even on the battlefield, we can mitigate the attitudes behind hajji and, by extension, the motivations behind war.

Thus, in line with the rest of this project, I will examine hajji as it appears in war literature with Kenneth Burke’s scapegoating mechanism in mind in order to extract a
clearer understanding of hajji’s symbolic significance in the dramas of our post-9/11 wars in Iraq and Afghanistan. Burke writes,

[If the great pyramidal structure of medieval Europe found its ultimate expression in a system of moral purgation based on the two “moments” of “original sin” and “redemption,” it would seem to follow that the “guilt” intrinsic to hierarchal order (the only kind of “organizational” order we have ever known) call correspondingly for “redemption” through victimage. (Permanence 284)]

This is what I consider the most concise statement of Burke’s scapegoat process as it exists in the drama that is human life, a cycle that I see at work in the mechanisms behind hajji. Therefore, I will apply Kenneth Burke’s concept of “identification” and his ideas about the master trope “synecdoche” to hajji’s appearance in contemporary American war literature, and I will use Burke’s ideas to show how hajji is now part of a performance-based post-9/11 “rhetoric of insult” (to borrow Thomas Conley’s phrase) that American soldiers employ to enact Burke’s scapegoating process at a cultural level.

The Birth of Hajji

Hajji likely originated during the United States’ invasion of Iraq in 2003. In two of the earliest, book-length, first-hand accounts that were published about the invasion (both were written by journalists embedded with U.S. troops), hajji appears as an epithet, and in both cases it is used to describe a dangerous enemy. In Boots on the Ground (2003), Karl Zinsmeister recalls bedding down for the night with the 82nd Airborne at what was once Iraq’s Talil airbase: “If nature calls,” he muses, “don’t go out too far or you could be mistaken for a hajji” (80). In The March Up (2003), Bing West writes about
a gunner named Chris Madia who, during the invasion, tells the complaining driver of his Humvee, “Some hadji will ding you sitting there behind the wheel, and I’ll drop him, and after that I won’t have to listen to you anymore” (54). Later, as the platoon digs in and prepares for sleep, West writes, “They scooped out their fighting holes and sat in the stinging dirt, whispering back and forth about how they would hit the hadjis in the balls or break their jaws or snap their necks” (60). Nothing similar exists in comparable reportage from America’s earlier invasion of Afghanistan, but as we can see in these two examples, hajji began as a reference to an unseen but present enemy.55

While neither West nor Zinmeister bother to explain the term further in their reports—context suffices in both cases—hajji did not escape the attention of the wider media beginning as early as 2003. And, for a time, it usually referred to an armed and organized enemy. Most likely, the first person to report on the emergence of hajji as an epithet in Operation Iraqi Freedom was Jay Price, a staff writer for The News and Observer (based in Raleigh, NC) in September of 2003. “Every war spawns epithets,” he writes, using a soldier in Iraq who had labeled his footlocker with the words “Hodgie Killer” as his prime example (A1). Price goes on to briefly examine hajji’s disturbing

55 It took a relatively long time for book-length reportage about the war in Afghanistan to emerge. For instance, the so-called Battle of Tora Bora occurred in December of 2001, but the first book about it—Sean Taylor’s Not a Good Day to Die—did not appear until March of 2006. The United States’ war in Afghanistan officially “began” and “ended” before and after the war in Iraq. Yet, all literature related to the conflict in Afghanistan has lagged far behind that of Iraq. This can be traced to any number of reasons. When the wars began, it likely had something to do with the smaller number of Americans who were actually fighting in Afghanistan or the fewer number of journalists embedded with troops there. Now, it remains a baffling trait of war literature’s publication history.
legacy by quoting John Balaban, a Vietnam-era war poet and writer in residence at North Carolina State University. “That sounds familiar,” Balaban says, drawing a parallel to his own experiences in Vietnam:

There were several words—“gook,” “slope,” “dink.” Some of these were meaningless, but they were all working toward the same goal, of trivializing and depersonalizing the enemy. It makes it easier to kill these people and not feel bad about it. (A1)

In May of 2004, Bob Herbert published a column in The New York Times about an Army staff sergeant named Camilo Mejia who was court-martialed for refusing to return to combat in Iraq after his mid-tour furlough at home. Mejia describes the way American servicemen and women began quickly using hajji following the invasion of Iraq: “You just sort of try to block out the fact that they’re human beings and see them as enemies. You call them hajis, you know? You do all the things that make it easier to deal with killing them and mistreating them” (A23). That same month, Douglas Jehl and Andrea Elliot also explained how the term “haji” developed as a derogative in another story for The New York Times. They quote a guard who worked in a detention center in Afghanistan, who speaks about the prisoners: “I think that giving them the distinction of soldier would have changed our attitudes toward them. A lot of it was based on racism, really. We called them hajis, and that psychology was really important” (A5). A year later, in May of 2005, Herbert followed with another column about an Army private and eventual conscientious objector who saw men in his unit shatter glass bottles over the heads of Iraqi civilians as their Humvees passed by. When the private confronted one of
these men, the man responded, “Look, I hate being in Iraq. I hate being stuck here. And I hate being surrounded by hajis” (A21).

Perhaps because there was, in the early months following the invasion of Iraq, a somewhat recognizable “front” in the Iraq war, many insist that hajji is unique to Iraq. To be sure, the bulk of American war literature and reportage has been focused on the combat there, and since March of 2003, there were more American troops on the ground in Iraq than there were in Afghanistan, a fact that applied until June of 2010 (McLean). Still, from the very beginning of the United States’ military responses to 9/11, hajji’s reference system was already beginning to grow. There has long been a huge presence of U.S. military personnel deployed in support roles to bases in countries like Kuwait, Qatar, Saudi Arabia, Turkey, the United Arab Emirates, Kazakhstan, Bahrain, and Pakistan—far from Iraq and far from combat. The epithet may have begun on the battlefield, and it may have initially described an Iraqi enemy in dehumanizing terms, but as Price points out, as early as September of 2003 (the “official” bombing of Iraq began six months earlier, on 18 March 2003), hajji already described anyone from the Middle East or from anywhere in Southwest Asia (A1). Rick Atkinson noticed the same widening in hajji’s references during the invasion itself. In his chronicle of the two months he spent with the 101st Airborne Division—In the Company of Men (2004)—Atkinson explains, “Kuwaitis, Saudis, and all others with vaguely Semitic features were known collectively as hajjis” (33). Even if the individual American military member
hasn’t actually served within the borders of Iraq or Afghanistan, she or he has probably moved around southwest Asia with striking fluidity, and \textit{hajji} has made the trip too.

From 2005 through 2010, I served in Saudi Arabia, Bahrain, Qatar, Turkey, Kazakhstan, and the United Arab Emirates, and I flew all around the region in a KC-10 refueling tanker. Everywhere I went, on the ground and in the sky, I personally heard (and used) \textit{hajji} to describe people from Saudi Arabia, Bahrain, Qatar, the United Arab Emirates, Kazakhstan, Afghanistan, Pakistan, Turkey, and even Bangladesh. A particularly quick-moving meme, \textit{hajji} fulfills the American need to conceptualize the Other as homogeneous, different, and dangerous. Thus, \textit{hajji} can readily describe any person in any country who may come into contact with any American in any deployed location after 9/11, regardless of that person’s status as an enemy, a Muslim, a civilian, or even an ally. I once bought a cinnamon roll from a “Cinnabon” franchise in an upscale mall in Dubai while waiting to see the movie \textit{Avatar} in a 3-D theater. A friend of mine, a captain in the Air Force, walked up to me and said, “Hajji makes a nice cinnamon roll, huh?” Clearly, \textit{hajji} extends far beyond the battlefield.

Like me, other support troops encounter the word in everyday parlance. In the non-fiction book \textit{Soldier Girls} (2014), Helen Thorpe writes about a female soldier named Debbie whose unit was often tasked with “guarding” Afghan construction workers at an American Army base named Camp Phoenix in late 2004. Debbie relates how many of the soldiers from her unit called this “hadji duty” or “hadji watch,” even though these Afghan men were far from enemies, not to mention the fact that they were employees of the
United States (161). Debbie notes the racism behind hajji’s existence as a symbol (172), as does Kayla Williams in her memoir, Love My Rifle More than You (2005). Williams recounts her experiences as an intelligence specialist during the 2003 invasion of Iraq. She and her unit are working on a “relatively secure” base outside a town called Sinjar when a male soldier gives her a “hajji-be-good stick” to put under her pillow while she slept (256). She explains: “Some of the locals (who drove the buses) slept right behind the building where I slept. Matt didn’t trust them. So he wanted to be sure I’d be safe. That’s why he gave me the stick to keep under my pillow at night” (257). Earlier in the memoir, Williams admits, like Debbie does, that hajji is dehumanizing, and that it is designed to ensure that “we didn’t see our enemy as people” (200). As Williams sees it, such a perspective is the “first thing any soldier [learned] in a combat situation” (200). Thus, hajji follows the usual path of logic: since 9/11, the threat of terrorism is everywhere, even if we can’t see it. So, too, is the paranoia, and that paranoia might actually increase the further one gets from “combat.”

Note that, while Williams is sufficiently retrospective about this linguistic reality, she clearly considers herself to be in a “combat situation” and she intends that status to somewhat justify hajji. I certainly don’t dispute the hazards she faced and the cautions she took in response to anything she did during her tour in Iraq. Yet, the fact remains that her “hajji-be-good stick” was not intended to be used against any enemy, and there certainly was no “combat” threat involved in its potential usage. Like Debbie’s “hadji watch,” the disdain conveyed in the slur is more general than that. Williams wasn’t
protecting herself from a wave of hardened Al Qaeda insurgents jumping the fence and firing AK-47s; she was protecting herself from friendly bus drivers.\footnote{Williams is unique in pointing out the following: “In Iraq we called them \textit{hajjis} but we also called them \textit{sadiqis}—which means ‘my friends’—or \textit{habibis}—‘my darlings’ (Soldiers seldom had any idea what these Arabic words meant)” (200). As far as I am aware, she is the only writer of a war memoir or of war fiction involving the Iraq war in any way who mentions \textit{sadiqi} or \textit{habibi} as interchangeable terms for \textit{hajji}.}

\textit{Sniping Hajji}

These examples prove the pervasive nature of \textit{hajji} in America’s war discourse, but they do not explain the specific nature of \textit{hajji}, a nature that allows it to travel so well, so that it simultaneously summons the specific and the general, the familiar and the foreign. \textit{Hajji} is an extension of what Herman Melville calls, in the title of the penultimate chapter of \textit{The Confidence-Man} (1857), the “\textit{Metaphysics of Indian Hating}” in American culture.\footnote{The full chapter title is “Containing the Metaphysics of Indian-Hating, According to the Views of One Evidently not so Prepossessed as Rousseau in Favour of Savages” (201).} Just as Richard Drinnon explains in his seminal work \textit{Facing West: The Metaphysics of Indian Hating and Empire Building} (1980), \textit{hajji} is an abiding expression of a “national animosity” that has driven the metanarrative of American war culture for centuries (xxii). \textit{Hajji} is rooted in the Puritanical savage-civilian binary that drove western expansion, fueled the conquest of the American west, and justified the U.S. military’s genocidal efforts to eliminate the native population of North American. While the “\textit{hajjification}” of the post-9/11 “enemy” may not be explicitly directed toward
native tribes in the United States, “Indian hating” at the socio-historical level excuses, authorizes, and provides the model for its racist undertones. Symbols and mascots like the Washington Redskins and the North Dakota Fighting Sioux and Chief Wahoo culturally authorize *hajji*, “HAJKLR” license plates, and the “Hajji Girl” song (more on these later). Because Americans are so thoroughly inundated with widely accepted stereotypes of Native Americans, the American military member can easily accept and unquestioningly embrace words like *hajji* and deploy it in a manner similar to Puritanical nineteenth century “savage Indian” stereotypes. As Billy J. Stratton writes of the captivity narrative commonly attributed to Mary Rowlandson and Increase Mather’s *A Brief History of the Warr with the Indians of New-England*:

> A primary function of writings such as them was to validate Puritan claims and justify the prosecution of the war through the graphic chronicling of “Indian depredations” and cruelties that functioned to demonize, marginalize, and effectively silence Native subjectivities. (8)

*Hajji* can be conceived as a modern manifestation of the same function.

Likewise, the “hajjification” of America’s twenty-first century enemy can be included in Gerald Vizenor’s concept of “manifest manners” (3) and in what Tom Englehardt describes as “the imperial unconscious” (103). Popular history and Western movies and other forms of “the literature of dominance,” Vizenor writes, “are not cultural

---

58 Officially, the University of North Dakota dropped its Fighting Sioux nickname in 2012, but it persists in over 2,200 logos around the multimillion-dollar arena that houses the popular UND hockey team. The arena is known as “The Ralph” after Ralph Engelstad, an alumnus who funded the arena’s construction. Before his death in 2002, Engelstad emblazoned the profile image of a stoic cartoon Indian all around the arena, creating a cost-prohibitive “safeguard” against the possibility that the mascot would ever be removed (Bowie).
visions” (7). Rather, Vizenor continues, these simulations are “the vicious encounters with the antiselves of civilization, the invented savage” (7). Therefore, when we look at contemporary war literature through a similar lens, hajji becomes just as complex as the past examples of “native-hating” that Drinnon examines in his book, perhaps even more so (xxvi). I would go so far as to place much of the literature that has emerged from our wars in Iraq and Afghanistan under Vizenor’s umbrella of “the literature of dominance” as well. Were one to take Will Wright’s Sixguns & Society: A Structural Study of the Western (1975) and substitute “Iraq or Afghanistan Combat War Narrative” for “Western,” much of Wright’s analysis would hold true. As Robert Ivie summarizes in “Savagery in Democracy’s Empire” (2005), “Although the trope of savagery is not unique to American war rhetoric, it is indigenous to it and deeply ingrained in the political culture” (56).

In The Puritan Culture of America’s Military (2014), Ronald Lorenzo examines U.S. Army war crimes in Iraq and Afghanistan, basing much of his analysis on the persistent nature of “Puritanical revenge” in the wars America has waged in response to 9/11. He writes:

Instead of revenge, in its more traditional, and therefore authentic state, Puritanical revenge takes a form in which violence still exists but the existence of the emotion driving that violence is hypocritically denied. . . . where traditional forms of revenge had a limit on deaths socially imposed by the community, there is an apparent infinite desire for revenge—and deaths—in the wars waged in Iraq and Afghanistan. (111)

The most glaring example of the persistence of this Puritanical revenge metanarrative in contemporary war literature is Chris Kyle’s “autobiography” (co-written with Scott

Chris Kyle never uses the term *hajji* in his “autobiography,” but he explicitly invokes the Puritanical savage-civilian binary as he describes his mindset as a sniper:

> Savage, despicable evil. That’s what we were fighting in Iraq. That’s why a lot of people, myself included, called the enemy “savages.” There really was no other way to describe what we encountered there.

> People ask me all the time, “How many people have you killed?” My standard response is, “Does the answer make me less, or more, of a man?”

> The number is not important to me. I only wish I had killed more. Not for bragging rights, but because I believe the world is a better place without savages out there taking American lives. Everyone I shot in Iraq was trying to harm Americans or Iraqis loyal to the new government. (4)

It is important for Kyle that he maintain this binary, and if the flood of responses to Clint Eastwood’s cinematic adaptation of the book is any indication, many Americans are all too eager to accept his attitude as acceptable and representative. On the next page, in a rare expression of intended humility, Kyle questions the value of “publishing [his] life story” (5). “Who cares about my life?” he asks, “I’m no different than anyone else” (5).

People who see Eastwood’s version of Kyle as a glorification of war might all hope that

---

59 All references to and citations from Chris Kyle’s “autobiography” are from the 2012 first edition of the book. Since then, the publisher—HarperCollins—has issued two more editions, one to remove all references to a man Kyle calls “Scruff Face” and another to accompany the release of the movie. In drafts of the book and in an interview with Bill O’Reilly (and other interviewers), Kyle identifies “Scruff Face” as Jesse Ventura, a former S.E.A.L. and the former governor of Minnesota (O’Reilly). In his autobiography and elsewhere, Kyle makes a number of claims about Ventura that have since been ruled to be fabrications (Stern).
Kyle’s perspective is different from the typical American serviceman or woman. The sad reality is that it probably isn’t.

Still, to be fair, the movie version of Kyle’s life strays significantly from the limited perspective of the “autobiography” since it is feeding an American audience hungry for any tale that might be—however loosely—“based on a true story.” Kyle’s writing style is bare, straightforward, and unembarrassed. In small chunks of text, he describes barroom fights, weapons, training scenarios, and combat, all with the same matter-of-fact tone. This is a man whose identity and perspective are rooted in resolve and certainty, so when he describes punching a guy in a crowded bar in Steamboat Springs, Colorado, his narration differs very little from the way he describes shooting a man with an AK-47 in Ramadi. Not only is this very unsettling for the reader, it must have been difficult for the screenwriter, Jason Hall. Kyle spends more time describing the guns he used in Iraq than he does narrating his life.

Both the movie and the book, yes, present the story of an exceptionally effective and unapologetic Navy sniper with 160 confirmed kills. And, yes, all aspects of the movie and the book are disturbing, including the fact that, in the end, Kyle’s skill with a rifle and his savage-civilian perspective still fail to bring him and his family protection from the ravages of war. But the movie also treats the metanarrative Kyle outlines in the passage above with a bit more ambiguity and a lot more hero worship, suggesting that this was one man’s way of compartmentalizing war that, while it prevents him from admitting any guilt or uncertainty about his part in the war, it still ultimately destroys
him. One small example (there are many) of the film’s departures from the book is enough to show a slightly different intent behind Eastwood’s storytelling. At one point in the movie, Kyle’s wife Taya begs him to stay home, to not deploy to Iraq for a fourth time: “I need you to be human again,” she says. Interspersed throughout the book are a number of Taya’s first person recollections, and in them she repeatedly expresses her wish that Kyle would stay home. However, that line exists nowhere in the “autobiography.”

Perhaps expectedly, then, the movie adaptation takes considerable license with many other aspects of Kyle’s life as it tries to shape individual scenes of the rather bland book into a narrative arc. In the book, Kyle describes his very first “kill,” a shot that kills an Iraqi woman before she can set a grenade ahead of a Marine convoy: “It was the first time I’d killed anyone while I was on the sniper rifle. And the first time in Iraq—and the only time—I killed anyone other than a male combatant” (3). The movie features this scene in its sentimental opening sequence (as Kyle does in the opening “scene” of his book), but the movie tweaks it in two significant ways. First, it inserts a young boy into the action, and it fictionalizes the scene by making this teenager charge an American tank with a grenade held high. He, not the woman, thereby becomes Kyle’s first “kill.” Secondly, the movie carefully suggests this scene is the first time Kyle kills anyone. Yet, as Kyle explains in the “autobiography,” before he ever picked up a sniper rifle, he had already deployed to Iraq for an entire six-month tour, and during this tour, as he says, “I started killing a lot of Iraqis” (89).
These may seem to be unimportant details, but they speak to a larger project in the film, one that Michael Carson says is driven by “pure unadulterated kitsch” (n. pag.). This is where \textit{hajji} comes into play as a symbol. After a flashback to Kyle’s earlier life as a boy and then as a rodeo cowboy, the movie picks up the opening scene with the grenade-carrying boy and then follows Kyle back to a mostly empty bunkhouse on his Forward Operating Base in Iraq. The actor, Bradley Cooper, plays Kyle as heavily burdened but pragmatically resolved by the experience. He walks in and asks his friend Biggles, “Where is everybody?” Biggles responds, “Training those hajji soldiers” (Hall 41).\footnote{60} Here, \textit{hajji} describes the good guys—Iraqis willing to serve in the newly formed Iraqi military. Yet, this scene and this conversation never happen in the “autobiography.” In the book, Kyle does express his unvarnished disdain for the newly formed Iraqi Army, but like many other departures from the book that the movie takes, \textit{hajji} brings something more complex to the emotional core of the film that, presumably, Hall or Eastwood found lacking in Kyle’s book.

Does \textit{hajji} lessen or reinforce Kyle’s repeated invocation of the savage-civilian binary or is it just one more insertion of military kitsch? While Hall says that he pieced together his dialogue and other authenticity-lending elements like \textit{hajji} from sources other than Kyle’s book, the scene above allows the movie version of Chris Kyle an opportunity to express his conviction that the enemy is guided by evil while a good God

\footnote{60 All citations and page references from the movie refer to Hall’s “Second Draft” script available at scridx.com. Some small discrepancies exist between the script and the words that appeared in the movie.}
guides the Americans (a repeated refrain in the “autobiography”). In the movie scene in the bunkhouse, “Biggles” hears of Kyle’s proficiency with his rifle. After saying that all the other S.E.A.L.’s are off training *hajjis*, Biggles asks, “Did you pop your cherry?” Kyle responds, “It was evil, man. That was hate like I’ve never seen before.” Kyle goes on to say that all his kills that day were “righteous. Like God was up there blowing on my bullets” (Hall 41). In the book, Kyle does use the phrase about God’s breath (I assume it’s a common phrase among American snipers), but it describes one of his “longest confirmed kills in Iraq” during the 2004 battle of Fallujah, not his first “kill” as a sniper (179). The word “righteous” is also, like *hajji*, a movie invention.

In the movie, the entire story is driven by Kyle’s obsession with an Iraqi sniper named Mustafa who was an Olympic marksman for Syria, but this plot barely correlates with anything in the book or, we can fairly assume, with Kyle’s war. This man becomes the movie’s overburdened scapegoat, and the plot culminates with Kyle finally getting the upper hand on this evil sniper. Immediately after Kyle shoots Mustafa from over a mile away, he rolls over and calls his wife on his satellite phone and tells her he is coming home, while a massive sandstorm and a wave of brown people with guns bear down on his position on the rooftop of an old building. According to Kyle’s book, none

---

61 The film ends with a note stating that the movie was based on the “autobiography.” In an interview with *Rolling Stone*, though, Hall reports that he collected much of the “nuances of war” from a trip he made to visit Kyle in Texas in 2010. As Hall says, “There was a lot of great material in [the book], but I knew there was more to this guy than was in those pages” (n. pag.).
of this ever happened. In the book, Mustafa is only mentioned once, in passing, as Kyle describes a day in Fallujah in November of 2004:

While we were on the berm watching the city, we were also watching warily for an Iraqi sniper known as Mustafa. From the reports we heard, Mustafa was an Olympics marksman who was using his skills against American and Iraqi police and soldiers. Several videos had been made and posted, boasting of his ability. I never saw him, but other snipers later killed an Iraqi sniper we think was him. (139)

Kyle doesn’t kill this man or even mention him ever again. He does mention that he often called home during operations, but no conversation close to the one that closes the movie is recorded anywhere in the book. And while Kyle also mentions sandstorms in the book, not once does a sandstorm ever bear down on him and his buddies as they try to escape from a besieged rooftop. What is going on here? Carson argues that the movie “manipulates substandard genre tropes to produce an innocuous and utterly uninteresting character study, turning a once breathing man into a figment, an avatar of our lazy imaginations” (n. pag.). That it does, and hajji is one of its tools, which, as I mentioned above, appears nowhere in the book.

Tone has a lot to do with its absence. With some effort, one could read Kyle’s “autobiography” as just that, a first-hand account of S.E.A.L. training and that training’s culmination in one man’s actual experience of war. Kyle’s diction and the bulk of his narration would support such a reading since he tries to adhere to the sanitized and sometimes official voice of a man who spent a large portion of his life following the inertia of a career in the military while acquiring little or no formal education beyond high school. He deploys to Iraq four times, and the enemy changes, as it should, as time
passes. During the invasion of Iraq and his first deployment, he largely sticks with “Iraqis” (76-78), and then soon thereafter he begins alternating between “insurgents” and “terrorists” and “Iraqis.” Often, he sounds as if he is repeating “intel” briefings he received while deployed. But then his horribly limited savage/civilian worldview pushes itself onto the page.

In one passage, Kyle lectures the reader on the “terrorist forces” that “either continued or began fighting after Saddam was deposed” (119). He adopts a professorial tone as he teaches us about those groups, from the “Ba’thist Party that Saddam headed” to the Fedayeen “paramilitary resistance group” to “Iraqi guerillas” and “al-Qaeda in Iraq” (119). He tells us about the “Iranians and their Republican Guard” and “what came to be known to the media as ‘the insurgency’” (120). When his unit starts training Iraqi men to serve in the new Iraq Army, he says, “we called them all jundis, Arabic for soldiers” (251). Kyle retains this confident, almost condescending, tone throughout; however, despite all of his “officialese,” Kyle cannot avoid the urge to conceive every one of these people comprehensively. Paul Fussell describes this soldierly impulse as “the versus habit” (Great War 86). And so Kyle predictably reverts to his easily applied, general label of “evil” to describe anyone of those people who happen to end up in his gun sights. This is the message of both the book and the movie: if Kyle is shooting him, he is evil, not the other way around. As Carson describes Kyle, he is a “fantastic and fascinating mass of contradiction, absurdities, and hypocrisy” (n. pag.). The ironic incongruity of Kyle’s perspective is obvious in the book despite—or even because of—
Kyle’s unwavering certainty, but the movie needed a little extra push to translate that to
the screen.

Carson writes, “our uniquely modern kitsch privileges authenticity to such a
degree that it mistakes authenticity for art” (n. pag.). This partly explains why the
American Sniper filmmakers used hajji as they did. In the movie, when Kyle is leading a
group of Marines through a section of Ramadi, making sure all houses are empty as they
move past, they discover a family. After a tense struggle, the father begs them all to come
in from the alleyway: “please tell the others to come inside,” he says, “If you are in the
street, he will know” (Hall 52). A Marine in the room says, “This hajji wants us in here
so he can blow us up.” This line is from the movie only; nothing like it exists in the
“autobiography,” and the script reads, “This sand nig’ want us in here so he can blow us
up” (Hall 52). Carson worries that kitsch like this instance of hajji can trick an audience
into feeling “warm and fuzzy (or angry and titillated) without any guilt for the obviously
contrived sappiness” (n. pag.). It seems to me that he is right. “Sand nig’” would have
interrupted that flow. It would have introduced too big of a racist stumbling block into the
flow of this fictional scene designed to heighten the sentimental “sappiness” of the
movie’s plot. “Sand nig’” would have pulled our focus off the good-evil binary and onto
the utterance. Hajji, on the other hand, allows us to pass right on by and ignore its
symbolic significance since it is nearly drowned out by everything else Kyle insists is
ture about himself and the enemy. A closer look, though, reveals that the first hajji
describes members of the Iraqi Army who are being trained by the American military,
and the second one describes an imaginary threat (the old man, it turns out, is entirely innocent). These two *hajjis* contain every ounce of the loathing and superiority that Kyle conveys in his reference system, but they also complicate it. Or, more precisely, they quietly highlight that Kyle’s logic is just as untenable and ridiculous as *hajji*.

*Dismantling Hajji*

In other American wars, there was little mistaking the demonizing function of “chinks” and “japs” and “gooks.” In our more recent wars, however, as the heavy differences between the movie and book version of *American Sniper* reveal, *hajji* operates—at times—with both more ambiguity and more precision. For one, *hajji* is a byproduct of the American need to simulate the enemy in terms its symbol-using animals (both soldiers and civilians) are familiar with. It is used to assuage fear and vengeance and hatred and guilt. But its complexity comes from the fact that soldiers like Chris Kyle feel an obligation to force convenient metanarratives and historical myths of American exceptionalism (what Burke would call order) onto their stories of war while they also attempt to leave their tales free of that order’s attendant guilt.

As Umberto Eco writes in *Travels in Hyperreality* (1985), America has a taste for the “sign that aims to be the thing, to abolish the distinction of the reference” (7). The sign—in this case *hajji*—through repetition, takes the place of the thing (a mass of human

---

62 The movie even goes so far as to give this old man a name (“Sheikh Al-Obeidi”). It also invents a living symbol of the “evil” Kyle abhors in the form of a horrible man nicknamed the “Butcher” who likes to torture people with an electric drill.
beings that may or may not be considered American enemies) and becomes its double, its “plaster cast” (7). This impulse, Eco writes, “is the reason for this journey into hyperreality, in search of instances where the American imagination demands the real thing, and to attain it, must fabricate the absolute fake” (8). *Hajji* is just as derogatory as “chink” and “gook,” and like these other slurs, it is an “absolute fake” when it is uttered by an American in the context of war. It takes no large leap of logic to draw the conclusion that it is easier to kill an absolute fake, a double, or a plaster cast. However, *hajji* is still a sign-carrier of more nuanced, dialectic proportions because the “thing” or the “reference” itself covers such a wide range of possibilities. The object that *hajji* “points to” is both everywhere and nowhere.

As Drinnon suggests, “Societies are known by their victims” (xxii). Societies are also known by the way they describe their victims, and the ubiquity of *hajji* and its wide range of references reflect more about American fear and motivations in this “Global War on Terror” than it does about the enemy itself. Such dialectic imagining is nothing new, though, in fiction, memoir, or autobiography. In 1938, Kenneth Burke outlined the steps that Hitler took in *Mein Kampf* to establish the international Jew as the perfect enemy of and scapegoat for the German people. “It may well be,” Burke writes in “The Rhetoric of Hitler’s Battle,” that “people, in their human frailty, require an enemy as well as a goal” (20). Burke outlines the ways Hitler first essentialized the Jew as the perfect, deserving scapegoat, and then used that “international devil” as a “visible, point-to-able form of a people with a certain ‘blood,’ a burlesque of contemporary neo-positivism’s
ideal of meaning, which insists upon a material reference” (3-4). Hitler invented his concept of blood purity to isolate and mark Jewish people as worthy of victimage, but what happens when the “devil” or “evil” is more loosely defined?

The “hajjification” of the enemy in our enduring conflicts in Iraq and Afghanistan has left a mess of entangled meaningfulness that glossaries, purported non-fictive accounts of war, and short journalistic explanations often fail to fully examine. As Englehardt points out (ironically) in The American Way of War (2010), it can be quite difficult to “spot a terrorist,” or, for that matter, is just as challenging to “spot” “anti-Iraqi forces” or “Baathist remnants” or “insurgents” (96, 97). Englehardt’s point is not that it is difficult to find an enemy and engage that enemy with military force; rather, he is arguing that language is nearing impotence in its ability to capture and describe the collective of human beings that can be called an enemy of the United States after 9/11. When movies like American Sniper deem it necessary to insert hajji into their tales, they prove that hajji is the colloquial answer for this conundrum.

There may be no Hitlerite voice naming the new devil and describing the new scapegoat for the American public, but Americans don’t need such a director. We are well-trained in that respect. Like the Puritans, American military members grasp for slurs like hajji to create, as Stratton puts it, a “mythico-historical master narrative to order the world in a way familiar” to the narratives they grew up with (15). Out of the forces of fear, vengeance, historiography, and “human frailty,” our contemporary war literature
provides ample proof that we are quite skilled in our ability to name an enemy and pile upon that enemy a society’s worth of animosity.

Of Hitler, Burke writes: “Let us try also to discover what kind of ‘medicine’ this medicine-man has concocted, that we may know, with greater accuracy, exactly what to guard against if we are to forestall the concocting of similar medicine in America” (1). Hajji has the potential to work similar Hitler-ian magic on American society, and that should frighten anyone into examining the word beyond glossing it in a special list of terms. As Edward Said writes in his preface to the twenty-fifth anniversary edition of Orientalism (1978),

[I]t is incumbent upon us to complicate and/or dismantle the reductive formulae and the abstract but potent kind of thought that leads the mind away from concrete human history and experience and into the realms of ideological fiction, metaphysical confrontation, and collective passions. (xxiii)

Part of hajji’s symbolic complexity as an enemy epithet comes from the fact that it is, at its etymological root, an Arabic word. Actually, it is an Arabic title. The Oxford English Dictionary agrees with Buzzell’s interpreter as the term is used in Muslim cultures: it is “the title given to one who has made the greater pilgrimage . . . to Mecca.” Since the pilgrimage itself is called the “hajj,” adding the adjectival suffix thus makes hajji an honorific title of respect for countless men across the Muslim world (the feminine equivalent uses the feminine suffix, resulting in hajjah).

Since it can take years to save up enough money to pay for such a trip, the term usually refers to elderly men. So, oftentimes, hajji can simply be a term of respect, independent of any actual completion of the pilgrimage. In various cultures, hajji has
been adopted into the surname itself and handed down to successive generations that may or may not remain tied to their Muslim heritage at all. Most often, however, the title comes to supplant the man’s first name completely in common speech (though rarely does it replace the first name legally). For instance, Leo Tolstoy’s eponymous hero of his historical novel Hadji Murâd (1912) is never referred to or addressed with anything but the two-term “Hadji Murâd.” It is reasonable to suggest, then, that Tolstoy’s warrior of shifting allegiances and shifting motivations made the pilgrimage to Mecca sometime before the events of the novel. Therefore, the convention as Tolstoy maintains it is both appropriate and culturally accurate. So, it stands to reason that an American soldier or an embedded reporter can indeed address an elder man in Iraq or Afghanistan with the title hajji and be taken in absolute earnestness. Yet, whereas Tolstoy only uses the word in its denotative sense, very few American soldiers do the same when they appropriate hajji.

Hajji has long enjoyed a troubled legacy in America, one that began with midcentury American pop culture when it was used to lend an exotic, Oriental flavor to a cartoon character. In 1964, the Johnny Quest cartoon series introduced American children to Johnny Quest’s sidekick, a twelve-year-old orphan from Calcutta named Hadji. This turban-wearing boy is the perfect companion (adopted brother even) for the series’ hero; he is wise and gentle and possesses a skill set that makes him both indispensably useful and ultimately mysterious. In the series I Dream of Jeannie, Hadji is the name of the “master of all genies” who appears in four different episodes. Like the Johnny Quest character, this “Hadji” wears a turban and speaks with a Hindi accent.
Both of these examples are clear manifestations of Edward Said’s concept of the patronizing Western attitude that he called “Orientalism.” Hajji’s development, rooted as it is in these caricatured images of the “Orient,” persists still today in western representations of the Middle East and South Asia. Indeed, Said could have been describing hajji in a 1980 essay that he wrote for The Nation:

So far as the United States seems to be concerned, it is only a slight overstatement to say that Moslems and Arabs are essentially seen as either oil suppliers or potential terrorists. Very little of the detail, the human density, the passion of Arab-Moslem life has entered the awareness of even those people whose profession it is to report the Arab world. What we have, instead, is a series of crude, essentialized caricatures of the Islamic world presented in such a way as to make that world vulnerable to military aggression. (490)

Today, hajji is an ethnic-religious-racial-antagonistic slur of massive symbolic implications that—sadly—reinforces the very attitude Said sought to critique and reshape.

For readers of American war literature and viewers of American war movies produced since 9/11, it is possible to accept hajji as just another specialized term in the confusing lexicon of the American military member and—in so accepting—perpetuate the stereotype that a wide swath of human beings are backward fanatics or war enthusiasts. Robert Ivie’s admonition that “it is difficult to see something that is everywhere” is a worthy reminder in hajji’s case (“Savagery” 58). Hajji’s growing and unquestioned appearance in contemporary war art of all kinds, despite lexical attempts to explain it, suggests that its acceptance as a symbol is growing. As Northrop Frye posits, “typical recurring images” of a genre function as “communicable units” (Anatomy 99).
*Hajji* appears so often and is accepted so easily that a reader or viewer can easily pass the term by as a convenient label for any anonymous, faceless enemy amid the baffling panoply of organizations and individuals who oppose the United States’ global military actions since 9/11.

In the Academy Award winning movie *Hurt Locker* (2009), one American soldier observes, through binoculars, a would-be suicide bomber sitting in a car. The soldier knows nothing of this bearded man’s background; so he simply calls him “hajji” in his report to his superiors. In an entirely different scene, another soldier pulls his pants down and “moons” a building where some enemy combatants are hiding: “We got you motherfuckers,” he says, “You’re fucking dead hajjis.” In the action film *Lone Survivor* (2013)—which was “based” on a memoir of the same name by a Navy S.E.A.L. named Marcus Luttrell—three Afghan goat herders stumble upon a small group of American special operations troops who are spying on a compound full of bad guys. The Americans grab the goat herders and tie them up, but they are unsure about their next step. In the movie, one of the Americans named Danny says, “Look at them. They fucking hate us. We don’t know how many hajji’s they have down there. We can’t let them go.” In the end, they let the Afghani goat herders go, and the rest of the movie becomes a running battle between hundreds of brown men and four Americans. Interestingly enough, like *American Sniper*, neither the epithet nor the exchange above exists anywhere in Luttrell’s original text. When the debate over the goat herders arrives in the memoir, one of
Luttrell’s fellow S.E.A.L.s named Danny Dietz says, “I don’t give a shit what you decide. Just tell me what to do” (235).

Still, the word should not be dismissed as a Hollywood invention or an overused cliché or even as a natural expression of ingrained American attitudes about the Orient. Brody points out that “It is painful for U.S. soldiers to hear discussions and watch movies about modern wars when the dialogue is full of obsolete slang” (n. pag.). It is also painful to hear military slang bandied about with linguistic abandon, but this does not mean filmmakers and authors are wrong to include hajji in their representations of war. In a recorded “conversation” between Tobias Woolf and Tim O’Brien that took place at Stanford University in January of 2011, Woolf points out that in the “powerful tradition of writing about” the subject of war, conventions and a “jazzy vocabulary” that is “encrusted with cliché” incessantly grow up within war’s art (n. pag.). Such clichés, he says, derive their power from the “ironic vocabulary” military members build up around “every corrupt thing” they do during war (n. pag.). Woolf is speaking of Vietnam, but hajji is no different, and Hollywood has not missed the authenticity-lending and guilt-driving resonance it can bring to contemporary war flicks. The trick is spotting the corruption through the crust, which is sometimes difficult to do when war literature must contend with those who merely accept the term at face value, shrug, and move on.

Robert Kaplan, in his neo-conservative celebration of American war-fighting traditions entitled Primal Grunts (2005), places hajji right beside chai (the tea), suggesting they are equal terms U.S. soldiers must adapt for their own use in
Afghanistan. Kaplan tells of a soldier nicknamed Big Country who shows Kaplan a village where he went to “inspect a minefield, and talk and drink *chai* (tea) with the *hajis*” (213). Kaplan pauses long enough to add an aside in a short appositive; he points out that *hajji* is “the nickname that American personnel had given the Afghans” (213). That is all he has to say about the term or Big Country’s success in communicating with the local population.

Clearly, there is a deep cultural pathology at work behind *hajji*, more so than its growing cliché-crust might suggest. As the pathological appearance of *hajji* continues to gain currency in war literature and war films, it becomes glaringly evident that it has less and less to do with an actual or imagined enemy or with the enactment of some sort of religious vituperation. It certainly does these things, but as it appears in American war literature, *hajji* is more a tool of American consensus building and a collective purging of war guilt. Moreover, fiction and other works of the imagination might be more appropriately poised for an honest presentation of *hajji*’s existence in war discourse. It is possible for makers of war fiction to provide more intense interrogations of war and memory than history, more nuance than reportage, less parochial versions of wartime historiography than autobiography and memoir.

In the fall of 2014, I made similar observations in an article I wrote for *War, Literature, and the Arts*. In that essay, I wrote about my first exposure to *hajji* and its widespread use as a comprehensive pejorative to describe the Other. I identify the word’s misappropriation by American servicemen and women (including myself), and I explain
the growing unease I have since come to feel whenever I encounter *hajji* in the literature I read and the profession I live. Previously, I was primarily concerned with the ways various writers approach *hajji* in their representations of war. Some try to explain or mitigate the word’s pejorative power with brief editorial notes, or they decide to include *hajji* in a special glossary of military lingo (like Brody). Sometimes—through footnotes or parenthetical asides—they insist the word is merely an innocuous nickname (like Kaplan). Others—usually professional journalists—simply excise the word completely from the dialogue of their work.

For example, Dexter Filkins (in *The Forever War*, a journalistic memoir about Iraq) and Sebastian Junger (in *War*, set in Afghanistan) only use the word in the Tolstoyian sense, as an honorific (Buchanan 1, 8). This is only speculation, but it seems reasonable to suggest that both writers heard the word being used as a derogatory in Iraq and Afghanistan. If true, they both chose to leave it out of their accounts of their experiences as journalists embedded with U.S. units. The marketing material that accompanies HBO’s *Generation Kill* series (about the 2003 invasion of Iraq) takes a different approach, arguing—somewhat happily—that soldiers use *hajji* “not necessarily [as] a pejorative term.” Instead, HBO claims, the word is more often used as an innocuous adjective used to describe unfamiliar things (Buchanan 5). Likewise, and even more difficult to accept, is memoirist Donavon Campbell’s claim (in his memoir *Joker One*) that the term “wasn’t meant to denigrate” when he and his fellow Marines used it in Iraq. Instead, he says, they used the term because the “two-syllable ‘hajji’” was easier to
say than the “three-syllable ‘Iraqi’” (Buchanan 4). Admirable though (some of) these attempts are in their attempt to account for the term’s potential significance, none of them fully acknowledge or capture the word’s complexities. Instead, the mere fact that many authors and editors find it necessary to explain, obfuscate, or mislead the meaning of hajji indicates that, as I point out above, there is a larger symbolic significance lurking behind the word whenever an American uses it in the context of war.63

This is the problem with breezy glosses of military “jargon” and even some straightforward attempts to explain the word in a manner that keeps the explanation from intruding too far into the narrative. Demon Camp (2014) is Jennifer Percy’s non-fictional story about her interactions with an Army sergeant named Caleb Daniels and the post-traumatic stress disorder that drove them both to seek out a formal, religious “exorcism” of the “demons” Daniels brought home from Afghanistan. Percy’s is a unique style for war literature—Lea Carpenter describes it as “participatory journalism, in extremis” (BR11). Midway through her tale, Percy gives us an impressively inclusive list of wartime slurs that, like hajji, emerge from training that seeks to make it easier for “humans [to] pretend they’re not killing humans” (120). As she summarizes, “Words used instead of person: Kraut, Jap, Reb, Yank, Dink, Slant, Slope, Skinny, Gook, Haji”

63 The glossary is available both in the jacket that accompanies the DVD version of the series and online (“Glossary”). The definition seems to draw from Evan Wright’s memoir of the same name that appeared in 2004. Therein, Wright mentions that he and his fellow Marines called flat bread “Hajji tortillas,” as the HBO definition does, though Wright does not attempt a further accounting for the term in his memoir (226). That said, I make it clear in my essay that I consider hajji’s part of speech irrelevant to its nature as a pejorative.
I have no problem with the list, per se, or Percy’s decision to include it in her book. After all, I do the same thing in the opening paragraph of this chapter. I cite it here to point out the dismissive effects that such a simple categorizing can have.

Such a list picks up a certain analysis-denying momentum as it appears in various iterations in multiple publications. In his essay about Paul Fussell, John Wilson writes that, “Lists indicate how difficult it is to represent all aspects of reality, and how much distortion is required to subordinate reality to critical orthodoxy” (180). Percy likely doesn’t include her list of epithets to illustrate this point, though; for one, it is nearly the exact same as another list in an essay by Stanley Hauerwas that appears online for the _Journal of Religion, Conflict and Peace_—Percy adds “skinny” and moves the location of “gook” as if she cut, pasted, and slightly updated the exact list of terms. Hauerwas, a professor of “theological ethics” at Duke Divinity School, writes:

> Soldiers are often criticized for denying the humanity of the enemy by calling the enemy names such as _kraut, Jap, reb, gook, Yank, dink, slant, or slope, or haji_. Moreover, the enemy is not “killed” but knocked over, wasted, greased, taken out, mopped up, or lit up. But surely these attempts to depersonalize the enemy as well as rename the process of killing should be understood as a desperate attempt to preserve the humanity of those who must kill. (n. pag., emphasis added)

Lists like these do little to urge a reader to probe further into _hajji’s_ place there, and they allow us to make casual assertions, as Hauerwas does, that human beings “must kill.” It is entirely possible for one to read through it, momentarily pause, conclude that this is just what happens in war, and move on.

Elinor Levy, in “Upper Echelons and Boots on the Ground,” does a close examination of _hajji_ in her essay on military parlance, suggesting that such words grow
out of the process of young men and women acquiring “cultural competency” as they “learn and internalize a wide array of new rules, procedures, and traditions” in their new lives within the military (99). When enlisted men and women have their “boots on the ground” in combat, she suggests, a special register of speech emerges, one that she describes with the neologism “enlistic” (100). She does admit that “hadji” is an expression of combat “soldiers’ animus towards those who are different from themselves,” but her primary concern is with creating this special glossary—she calls it a “disglossia”—for the uninitiated (108, 99). Levy’s effort is admirable and probably necessary, but by so categorizing military slang and arguing that this is just the way soldiers talk, she sort of celebrates its crudeness. Her essay may help to bridge the so-called civilian/military divide, but it also ignores larger, more troubling motivations. I doubt that anyone would make the same arguments about racial slurs and their persistent appearance in certain regions or subcultures of the United States.

To be sure, dictionaries and glossaries and lists clarify meaning, but they also limit it. As Mariana Birnbaum points out, “That slurs are the fastest vehicles by which national or regional antagonisms can be expressed is proven by the fact that often the very same motif takes widely different ‘national tags’” (253-254). In the case of hajji, however, national tags are not even necessary; or, one could argue, they are not feasible in our post 9/11 conflicts. There is no room, no need, nor the popular motivation to make a distinction between an Afghani or an Iraqi “Hajji shop” or to specify the allegiances of the person a “hodgie killer” is preparing to shoot. A “fucking hajji,” as the word is often
paired, can be anything that stands as an element apart from the American military
machine.

In his ambitious *Dictionary of International Slurs* (1944), A.A. Roback
recognizes that describing a word as “slur” or “epithet” or “stereotype” or even as “slang”
misses the full power of such a symbol; so Roback favors the word “ethnophaulisms” as
a term to describe any “foreign disparaging allusion” (13). Regardless the term we use to
denotatively categorize *hajji*, the strongest part of Roback’s dictionary of slurs is the
following point he makes in his introduction:

[T]he moment a slang coinage is encountered . . . we are immediately
aware that we are no longer in the sphere of lexicography, but have skirted
the realm of folklore and social psychology; for here we are studying
attitudes of one people toward another. (11)

In order to account for the attitudes that created *hajji*, a number of scholars have tried to
examine it from a sociological point-of-view. Rightly so, Said’s work and post-
colonialism theory in general drives much of the extant scholarship about *hajji*.

One of the first was Daniel Egan in his post-colonial study, “Frantz Fanon and the
Construction of the Colonial Subject: Defining ‘The Enemy’ in the Iraq War,” which
appeared in 2007. A sociologist, Egan looks at the “racialized nature” of the United
States’ “imperialism” as made apparent through our invasion and subsequent occupation
of Iraq. Drawing from Fanon’s theory of colonialism, Egan looks at the racist discourse
of contemporary war that recasts the Iraqi people as “lazy,” “unproductive,” “savage,”
and “dangerous” (144). Soldiers do this, Egan argues, in order to ensure the colonized
population remains appropriately subordinate to the “colonizer’s” superiority (144). As he puts it,

The racialized language of the Iraq war performs the important function of defining Iraqis as being “worthy” of subordination. In referring to Iraqis as “hajis,” US forces make assumptions that all Iraqis are Muslims . . . and that all Iraqis are the “enemy” or are potentially so, regardless of their political or religious affiliation. (149)

Egan’s work carefully outlines the sociological forces that have driven the agents of modern imperialism (soldiers) to recast every non-American as part of a massive, faceless, Muslim horde, one that must be controlled or eliminated.

Also in 2007, Keith Brown and Catherine Lutz examined seven war memoirs written by U.S. military personnel, not as literature or folklore, but as more documentary examples of Michel Foucault’s concept of “subjugated knowledges” (322). Such “grunt lit,” as they see it, forms a subaltern, yet important and “informed,” source of “multiple, militarized transnational processes that help drive contemporary globalization” (322). I don’t necessarily consider “grunt lit”—which Brown and Lutz simply define as memoirs written by “junior officers and enlisted” (328)—as clear examples of “subjugated knowledges.” None of the books they cite are, as Foucault describes his concept, “unqualified” or “disqualified,” nor are they “buried” or “disguised in a functionalist coherence of formal systemization” (81, 82). Indeed, one could easily argue that “grunt lit” really describes knowledge produced from a hegemonic social model. They call it “warrior knowledge” (322). Still, despite these issues, Brown and Lutz, like Egan, rightly put hajji in a post-colonial context, and they accurately suggest that “grunt lit” authors “seek to master the environment through a language that lurches from technical to
obscene but is always motivated by a taxonomic impulse” (325). On this point, Brown and Lutz make an important observation about *hajji:*

> Anyone is potentially a “Haji,” a general-purpose epithet that appears as the direct descendant of Vietnam’s “gooks” or “dinks” or Somalia’s “skinnies.” For many soldiers, as Williams wearily recounts, this category becomes synonymous with “enemy.” But others, including most of these authors, seek greater precision . . . These memoirs show the power—and danger—of analogical thinking in sense making. (326)

I agree. *Haji* can definitely be conceived of as an imperialist’s tool. It can, if one is often locked in the anguish of constant combat, also be counted as a response to the environment of war and a byproduct of hatred and fear and confusion. This conclusion about “sense making,” one could argue, is a gentler way to say the same thing as Tobias Woolf, that soldiers develop an “ironic vocabulary for every corrupt thing” they do during war. However, the final sentence of this passage from Brown and Lutz’ essay is the most useful one, at least as far as my project is concerned. Substitute “symbolic action” and “the scene-act relationship” for “sense-making,” and *hajji* becomes rife for a Burkean analysis.

Tyler Wall, in two separate essays about *hajji,* performs a closer examination of *hajji.* In his second essay, “Philanthropic Soldiers,” he follows the same line of analysis as Egan, Brown, and Lutz, concluding that, after interviewing twenty-four soldiers regarding their deployments to Iraq, *hajji* is part and parcel of how soldiers “make sense of both themselves and Iraqi others” (481). While this yet again comes dangerously close to normalizing or rationalizing the use of a racial and religious slur in a crude attempt to achieve ontological clarity, some of these soldiers, Wall claims, are honestly ignorant to
any suggestion that the word can be considered off-color, inappropriate, or even controversial. One soldier tells Wall about giving a presentation at a local high school on what the soldier titled “Hadji culture” and “Hadji geography” (496). The same willful ignorance, as Stacey Peebles points out, exists in John Crawford’s memoir, *The Last True Story I’ll Ever Tell* (2005). At one point, Crawford writes about a “hajji friend” but, as Peebles notes, Crawford is “perhaps unaware that his use of *hajji*, a pejorative American term for anyone Iraqi and/or Arab, as a modifier for ‘friend’ is rather oxymoronic” (113).

As far as the symbolic action that *hajji* represents, Wall’s other essay about *hajji*, “Imperial Laughs” is far more useful. In this essay, Wall examines *hajji* by “critically reading” a song written by a U.S. Marine named Joshua Belile and performed at Al Asad airfield in Iraq in September of 2005 in front of a large, laughing audience. A video of the performance was later posted on YouTube, in 2006. The song, known as “Hadji Girl,” reflects, Wall argues, “colonial sensibilities that help to mark difference as abject and disposable” (“Imperial” 81). That it does, and Wall’s analysis of the performance thoroughly reduces the song to its value as a troubling artifact, or as a “cultural expression” of Derek Gregory’s concept of the “colonial present,” objectionable though the lyrics of the song may be (74). It is, as Gerald Vizenor would likely describe it, a “colonial enactment” of dominance (*Manifest* 11). In “Hadji Girl,” *hajji* is a simulation only, one that supersedes anything relating to a recognizable object. Furthermore, in the

---

64 Currently, the performance can be viewed at <www.youtube.com/watch?v=C_qzEY8R3rU>.
word’s coarse misappropriation, an even deeper animosity is communicated, one that is actually intensified by the word’s denotative sense. While I agree with Wall’s analysis, I would add that Belile and his chuckling audience are reveling in their status as colonial superiors. The symbol abuse, at least before it was posted on the internet, was a performance only, an act of congregation by segregation.

The “story” of the song is dark and crude and violent, and follows a Marine who encounters a “Hadji” girl while taking cover inside a Burger King during a battle “out in the sands of Iraq” (“Imperial” 74). The Marine and the girl fall in love “at first sight” (74). So the Marine follows the “Hadji girl” to a “side shanty” where the girl’s brother and father jump up, shouting and waving “their AKs” (75). The song concludes with the Marine using the “Hadji girl’s” little sister as a human shield as he laughs “maniacally,” and “[blows] those little fuckers to eternity” (75). There is much to be said about this song and the elements of it that the audience might find funny. Wall examines those reasons, concluding that “even if we grant that the intent of ‘Hadji Girl’ was to be inoffensive, ‘dark humor,’ a ‘joke’ in the eyes of its supporters, the song should not be dismissed as trivial or insignificant” (80). It is, he concludes, a distasteful example of how American soldiers make sense of combat and war. That should disturb us.

65 Wall includes the full lyrics to “Hadji Girl” in his essay, “Imperial Laughs” (74-75).
It is worth noting here, as Wall does, that the U.S. Marine Corps investigated Belile and the song, concluding that Belile did not violate any military regulations because he was not wearing a full uniform (he is visible from the waist up and wears a tan undershirt) and therefore did not represent the U.S. Marines at the time (see fig. 9). And, for what it is worth, Belile did apologize later, though with major caveats, the most significant one (to me) being that the song was “nothing more than something supposed..."
to be funny, based off a catchy line of a movie” (qtd. in Mazzolini). The “catchy line,” which forms the chorus of Belile’s song, is undecipherable Arabic-sounding gibberish from the 2005 film *Team America: World Police*, a crude, but deeply satirical, comedy that was and is wildly popular across all corners of the U.S. military. Ironically, the popularity of the film among some soldiers and its presence in songs like Belile’s displays how easy it is to misread or misunderstand satire; indeed, *Team America* criticizes the very attitude Belile celebrates in his song.

One might argue that Belile’s use of both the phrase and the term *hajji* is a combat soldier’s way of dealing with the trauma and threats of battle and expressing “what it’s like to fight in Iraq.” I know nothing of Belile’s duty when he was deployed to Iraq; but as far as the performance of his song is concerned, he was on a stage on an extremely secure airbase being cheered on by more airmen and Marines when he quoted a movie made by the creators of *South Park*. Combat duty or sense making of war’s violence had nothing to do with it.

The word *hajji* does not appear in the *Team America*, but the phrase Belile says inspired his song is “Durka Durka Mohammed Jihad, sherpa sherpa bak Allah,” a punchline to an extended absurd joke delivered by one of the film’s “heroes” named *66*

---

66 The video of the original performance has been posted and removed from YouTube a number of times, and a number of other “performers” have posted their own version of the song on the website as well. On 11 February 2008, a user with the name “JDMEVO8” posted Belile’s performance again, and as of 1 June 2015, this version had been viewed 225,773 times. See Chris Mazzolini’s “Humor Attempt Falls Flat” for a news article about the song, the brief uproar it caused with the Council of American Islamic Relations, and for reactions from both Belile and the U.S. Marine Corps.
Gary. In the film, Gary tries to gain access to a terrorist hideout in Cairo; so he disguises himself with a turban and brown face paint and tries to pass for a “terrorist.” As Gary approaches the hideout, two bearded guards holding assault rifles challenge him. “Durka Allah Muhammad jihad,” one of the guards says. Gary hesitates. The other members of Team America watch, worried about this encounter since Gary hasn’t proven his mettle yet as a member of the team. Agitated now, the guard says again, “Bakala! Muhammad jihad! Allah durka durka Muhammad Jihad!” As the tension builds, Gary breaks his silence and responds, meekly, with more gibberish: “durka durka mohammed jihad, sherpa sherpa bak Allah,” he says. He is allowed to pass (see fig. 10).

Fig. 10. Screen shot of the scene in Team America. Courtesy author’s collection.

In “Imperial Laughs,” Wall discusses this phrase, and he describes the reasons why “Dirka Dirka Muhammad Jihad” might be so attractive to U.S. military members:

[T]he perceived incoherence of the “other’s” culture, especially the language of the colonized (is linked to) a logic of justification regarding the subjugation of the colonized . . . Through the incoherence of the dark others’ language, they are located in a field of racial and cultural hierarchy somewhere between civilization and savagery. (77)
Wall doesn’t explicitly make the link, but *hajji* operates in the same manner. It also animalizes all speakers of Arabic. Whereas the classical Greek polis formulated the word “barbaros” to describe anyone who didn’t speak Greek (because all non-Greek speakers sounded different, something like “bar bar”), the writers of *Team America* comically rendered Arabic speech into “durka durka” (Kitto 7-8). Indeed, elsewhere in the film, foreign terrorists are said to live in “Durkadurkastan.” This resonates with the typical American military member who often finds himself surrounded, not by flying bullets or improvised explosive devices, or death and blood, but by people he can’t understand.

Still offensive in their ultimate effects of rendering all Arabic speakers as homogeneously subordinate to the speaker’s culture and lumped into a religion that is popularly portrayed as one bent on creating terror around the world, *hajji* and “durka durka Muhammad Jihad” share a common etymological background: they are both nonsense. One may call such nonsense “sense making,” but that sense making has less to do with the stress of combat or even religious vituperation than it does with symbol mongering and scapegoating. Indeed, Belile’s “apology” may explain his intertextual borrowing of the phrase from *Team America* and his own sense of humor, but it does nothing to explain the phrase’s sign-carrying significance. It does nothing to explain why a bunch of off-duty support troops cheered and hooted when they heard his song.

---

67 Matt Stone and Trey Parker, the writers of *Team America* and the creators of the animated television show *South Park*, first used “durka durka” to mimic spoken Arabic in episode 509 of the *South Park* series entitled “Osama bin Laden Has Farty Pants” which first aired on 7 November 2001.
As Ivie writes, “The incomprehensible babble on the other side of the defensive walls surrounding democratic Athens was the threatening sound of the barbarian in ancient Greece” (“Savagery” 55). *Hajji* can serve the same purpose. As nothing but sound, it resembles Arabic, because it *is* Arabic. But to American ears it is noise only; it carries no concrete denotative meaning at all. And *this* is what makes *hajji’s* misappropriation by American military members so dangerous and so meaningful. Even if we accept the dubious claim that no meaning is sent or received with its utterance, its pejorative meaning proliferates anyway. The soldier Wall interviewed—the one who taught a class in his old high school on “Hadji culture”—may have been happily unaware of the word’s offensiveness, but his ignorance is almost irrelevant. If he did think “Hadji culture” was synonymous with “Iraqi culture,” it is highly unlikely that is how that unfortunate classroom full of teenagers received such labeling.

In her article, “Harm’s Way: Language and the Contemporary Arts of War,” Mary Louise Pratt outlines the way language has been deployed by the U.S. military as a very real and very effective weapon in Afghanistan. After describing a unit of Marines who used loudspeakers and rock and roll music to draw the Taliban into a fight, Pratt writes, “The act of war here is the purposeful manipulation of the enemy’s linguistic and symbolic codes in order to do the enemy harm, which is the purpose or currency of war making” (1518). *Hajji* is precisely this kind of manipulation of an enemy’s symbolic code, but it is also not necessarily *always* an overt attempt to verbally harm the described other. It is symbolic action. Pratt admits as much: “Do words,” she asks, “when intended
to wound, have an inalienable power to do so, or do addressees have the power simply to deflect them and refuse to be wounded?” (1522). In the case of hajji, addressees may have the power to deflect the insult or refuse to be wounded, but they may not be part of the dramatistic scene in which the utterance appears.

This is the case for both hajji and “durka durka,” but they also differ in one important way. “Durka durka Muhammad Jihad” has no material reference whereas hajji’s reference is virtually unlimited. As a symbol, then, hajji carries far more contempt and loathing. This is why Colby Buzzell’s interpreter was able to insist hajji is inoffensive; clearly, he was receiving a different meaning than the one intended. Or, at a minimum, he was being asked to define the word in an entirely different dramatic “scene,” a scene in which there was no symbolic clustering of alterity behind the word. He missed, as Emmanuel Levinas explains, that a word like hajji can operate much like a “third-person pronoun” which is “an impersonal, anonymous, but inextinguishable ‘consummation’ of being, which murmurs in the depths of nothingness itself” (52). Since it lacks an antecedent, the identity-starved subject can access a sense of substance and self via the absence implied in hajji. I’m guessing the interpreter’s answer would have been quite different had Buzzell shown him the video of “Hadji Girl.” Thus, hajji should be seen as—primarily—a performance of symbol mongering, as opposed to a useful part of wartime sense-making or an accumulation of cultural competence. Its original, denotative meaning left far behind without any object to perceive the intended or unintended insult, hajji’s utterance enacts a drama in and of itself.
Indeed, in the growing body of contemporary war literature penned by non-American authors, set in Iraq or Afghanistan, and published in English, very few use the term *hajji* as an epithet or even discuss it as such, perhaps because they have no agency in the dramatistic scene of *hajji*’s typical appearance. Afghan author Nadeem Aslam doesn’t use the term in either *The Blind Man’s Garden* (2013) or *The Wasted Vigil* (2008), both of which are set in war-torn Afghanistan. Nowhere in *The Human Body* (2014) does the Italian Paolo Giordano’s fictional squad of Italian soldiers on an isolated Afghan post use *hajji* or any other epithet for the enemy. The same is true about *The Corpse Exhibition* (2013), a collection of short war fiction written by the Iraqi author Hassan Blasim, and *The War Works Hard* (2005) a collection of poetry written by Dunya Mikhail, an exiled, Iraqi, female poet.

India-born novelist, Joydeep Roy-Bhattacharya, gently, uses *hajji* as an epithet in his novel, *The Watch* (2012), but he only does so once. In this one instance of *hajji*, Roy-Bhattacharya astutely uses the word to both lend authenticity to his dialogue (it is spoken by an American) and to complicate the labels of enemy and ally. After a small tribe of Taliban fighters die while attacking a remote American outpost in Afghanistan, a U.S. soldier prepares to escort the base’s Afghan translator outside the walls of the small base. The officer in charge hopes the translator will recognize some of the dead so he can include the information in his report of the attack to his superiors. A lieutenant tells the interpreter: “He’s going to take you to the hajjis” (102). The interpreter doesn’t comment on the slur, but as he inspects the dead bodies, he begins “to feel a reluctant kinship with
them—one that [he] cannot help but contrast with the way [he’s] been made to feel inside the base” (103). I cite these examples of *hajji*, or more precisely the lack thereof not to suggest that other cultures or countries avoid similar naming in war but to suggest that a performative unity exists in *hajji* as it appears in the stories and dramas of American war literature.

It does bear noting, though, that some American writers do attempt to simulate an Iraqi point-of-view pertaining to the epithet. In his second book of war poetry about the Iraq war—*Phantom Noise* (2010)—Brian Turner’s poem “Stopping the American Infantry Patrol Near the Prophet Yunus Mosque in Mosul, Abu Ali Shows Them the Cloth in his Pocket” takes a view of *hajji* from an imagined Iraqi perspective (61). As the title indicates, the poem’s speaker displays a sacred piece of cloth to some Americans he meets near the Iraq city of Mosul: Do you see this weathered strip of cloth, the golden threads / of its embroidery—how inconsequential it must appear to you, / only a strip of cloth . . .” (lines 1-3). Marking a pilgrimage with strips of cloth is an ancient ritual in many religions, and as the poem’s speaker tells the Americans, his father carried this “silk and cotton dyed black” all the way back to Iraq from Mecca (3). For this speaker, the cloth—like all other signifiers of his culture and religion—encompasses so much more than it may seem to an outsider. The poem concludes with the speaker explaining the pilgrimage, the “hajj,” and the word *hajji*:

. . . his pilgrimage
part of our religion, something I have not yet done,
this war of no help in that, believe me.
When you address me, do not call me Hajji,
I have not been so fortunate—and you?
You do not understand the words you speak. (9-14)

There are delicate shifts in this discussion of *hajji*, but the scene is still a performative, one-sided though it may be. The title indicates an audience for the speaker’s lesson, an audience to hear about power of *hajji*’s misuse to disrespect, minimize, or dismiss its true meaning. However, the address is directed toward a collective of soldiers described vaguely as an “infantry patrol.” Thus, it reads like a monologue in the dramatic scene of this poem, providing little reassurance, since there are no named individuals and no other agents, that anyone at all will hear and heed the speaker’s message. We are left with the impression that this Iraqi man is speaking into a void.

It is a sad reality that, as Wall explains, combatant and support soldiers “have normalized the phrase ‘Hadji’ to where they fail to see the use of the term as morally and politically problematic; it is simply a descriptive term for the foreign Other” (495). It is also a natural expression of self-deception and the scapegoating process. This brings me to my next question: if, as in much of contemporary American war literature, the speaker and the auditors are both American soldiers, does this change the nature of *hajji* as an epithet? Turner’s poem and Pratt’s essay would suggest that the answer is no. There may be no way to change *hajji*’s underlying offensiveness as Egan, Brown, Lutz, and Wall outline it, and we wouldn’t want its imperial implications to be ignored either. But its role as a symbolic performance between two speakers of the same language/culture suggests that it also serves a wider, synedochic purpose.
In the novel *Book of Jonas* (2012), American author Stephen Dau crafts his narrative around a Muslim boy’s wounding in an unnamed country (unnamed, yes, but the warzone is clearly somewhere in Iraq) and his subsequent emigration to the United States. The boy—named “Younis” in his homeland and renamed “Jonas” in Pittsburgh—survives a horribly misbegotten American operation due to the efforts of one American soldier named Christopher Henderson. Years pass as Jonas tries to assimilate to life in the United States; however, as he attends college and grows older, he is haunted by the fact that he retains very little memory of his homeland, his family, or the soldier (who was reported as missing in action and never heard from again). Fortunately, for his piecemeal memory and for Christopher’s mother, Jonas still has the soldier’s journal. He calls the man “his savior,” and one of “his savior’s” diary entries reads:

> What if you become convinced that, even though you are there to help them, the locals are not only unappreciative, but may actively hate you? What if you start calling all the locals hajjis? What if you start to see them less and less as human beings and more and more as things to be categorized as either very threatening or less threatening? What if your SAW gunner accidentally pops off a round or two in the general direction of a crowd of hajjis who have gathered for some purpose you don’t fully understand, but don’t like the look of? What if you all start popping off at the slightest provocation? What if you start looking for provocations? What if you start to feel bored when your weapon is silent? (140)

The musings of this exceptional, linguistically sensitive soldier highlights the symbolic implication—the synecdochic power—of *hajji*.

In an appendix to *A Grammar of Motives* (1941), Burke includes an essay he called “Four Master Tropes.” In this short essay, Burke outlines the relative strengths he sees behind metaphor, metonymy, synecdoche, and irony. He begins by clarifying that his
interest in these tropes is not only “with their purely figurative usage, but with their role in the discovery and description of the truth” (503). “Truth” is a slippery word as Burke uses it, as he intends it more as a description of the “truth” behind the link between figurative language and the reality it seeks to represent. In that pursuit, Burke places synecdoche at the top of this list of master tropes. Richard Wess explains:

“Synecdoches are representations that rhetorically qualify one another as they question and modify one another in a dramatistic dialectic” (118). As we can see in this short passage from The Book of Jonas, haji qualifies everything else. It modifies the soldier, the local population, the vague concept of an unnamed and unseen enemy, and the soldier’s ethical existence in war.

As Burke writes in The Philosophy of Literary Form, “synecdochic representation . . . [is] a necessary ingredient of a truly realistic philosophy” (26). Burke uses the simple example of a “house” to demonstrate what he means. Just as “house” refers to more than just a building, it represents—as a proxy—all the other “things” that “cluster about it” (Burke’s example is “the loved ones inside” the house) (27). Burke calls this linguistic phenomenon “house plus,” which, he says, “suggests also the importance of the name as an important aspect of synecdoche (the name as fetishistic representative of the named, as a very revealing part of the same cluster)” (27). Thus, the name comes to offer a

68 Burke defines synecdoche simply as “the figure of speech wherein the part is used for the whole, the whole for the part, the container for the thing contained, the cause for the effect, the effect for the cause, etc. Simplest example: ‘twenty noses’ for ‘twenty men’” (Philosophy 25-26).
“fetishistic surrogate” for the cluster it stands for (30). Likewise, any impulse associated with or enacted via the name is therefore a symbolic or vicarious act directed at the represented object.

Remaining with the passage from Dau’s novel, one might ask: What is “hajji plus”? What cluster surrounds hajji and its practically unlimited reference as far as the Other’s “polar otherness” is concerned (Philosophy 78)? As I have said, hajji has little to do with an enemy; the same is true for “hajji plus” in Dau’s novel. In this soldier’s diary entry, hajji is the only “name,” and it is wedged in the middle of a long list of nouns, actions, and emotions that cause Christopher massive amounts of guilt. Jonas reads the passage; we read the passage; but, really, it is Christopher Henderson’s solo performance that, as symbolic action, functions as a public admission of guilt—a confession—that enables this soldier to unburden himself at the reader’s expense.

Christopher purges himself with each “what if.” And the specificity of the list dares us to conclude that none of this has happened yet. With each repetition, hajji comes to stand in for attitude-driven action. The “what if” questions can be seen as answers to the larger question, “What does hajji synecdochically represent?” Hajji is a “fetishistic” naming of a soldier’s paranoid imaginings of hate, of fear, of aggression. By the end of the passage, it is clear that Christopher has already become, despite his own inclinations, an emotion-driven offender who has responded to the dramatic situation of war by manufacturing an enemy and a name for it. Like loved ones inside a house, inside hajji is the loathing Christopher sees, not in the face of an enemy, but in the faces of a civilian
population. There, he sees a reflection of the loathing he feels for himself. Burke says that synecdoche is the figurative use of the “container for the thing contained” (Philosophy 25). When Christopher asks, “What if you start calling all the locals hajji?” he has landed on a name for the container of his guilt: hajji (140).

Of Coleridge’s ancient mariner, Rueckert writes that “Confession itself is curative; simply verbalizing the pollution is the beginning of the purgative action” (Kenneth Burke 122). Christopher loads his guilt on the page of his diary and sends it off into the world via a frightened and injured Iraqi boy. In the private-public forum of Christopher Henderson’s journal, Jonas, the reader, and then Christopher’s mother (Jonas eventually gives her the diary) complete the scapegoat process. Christopher and his unit, we come to find out, “do” everything he fears in his series of “what if” questions. The sin-guilt-penance-redemption cycle is clear: Younis’ sister is killed and his village is destroyed (sin); Christopher (the scapegoat) saves the boy and suffers horribly in the process (penance); Jonas gives the journal to Christopher’s mother (Jonas’ and Christopher’s tragic redemption).

**Hajji, Identification, Scapegoating**

In Permanence and Change, wherein Burke expands on much of the scapegoating process he first developed while discussing Hitler and Mien Kampf, Burke notes,

> But speech in its essence is not neutral. Far from aiming at suspended judgment, the spontaneous speech of a people is loaded with judgments. It is intensely moral—its names for objects contain the emotional overtones
which give us the cues as to how we should act towards these objects.

(176-177)

Instead of letting language be a means of establishing binaries and a means of difference marking, however, Burke argues that the dialectic nature of language is the sole characteristic that unifies humans. Yet again, it is dangerous to rest on the conclusion that words like *hajji* naturally flow out of the babble and turmoil of war for combat soldiers or that they enact a colonizer/colonized hierarchy. These may be accurate analyses, but Burke would likely respond to them by saying, “Spontaneous speech is not naming at all, but a system of attitudes, of implicit exhortations. To call a man a friend or an enemy is *per se* to suggest a program of action with regard to him” (*Permanence* 177).

This is where Burke’s work becomes especially useful in this analysis. Note that Burke did not say, “to call a man a friend or an enemy is to suggest a program of action *upon* him.” Rather, such spontaneous speech as *hajji* deserves examination at the uttered level or, in dramatistic terms, at the scene-act level. That is, attached to *hajji* (unlike “barbaros” or “durka durka”) is a mass of “emotion or moral weightings” that “enforce the act itself, hence making the communicative and active aspects of speech identical” (*Permanence* 177). Furthermore, *hajji* falls well inside Burke’s “inadequate” category of symbolic action, a category that includes occasions “when speech confuses the handling of non-racial issues by stimulating racial persecution” (*Permanence* 177).

The American combat soldier may be trying to make sense of the world of combat and death and killing (as Wall and Egan and Brown and Lutz conclude) when he responds to his environment with demonizing terms for an enemy that is trying to kill
him, but what about the bulk of noncombat users of the term? In *The Other End of the Spear* (the “tip of the spear” being combat troops), John J. McGrath examines what he calls the “Tooth-to-Tail Ratio” in U.S. Army operations since World War I. That is, the balance of combat troops (“teeth”) to support troops (the “tail”). The U.S. Congress actually mandates that the Army maintain a minimum acceptable level of combat troops between 29 and 34 percent of its total force.\(^9\) With that in mind, McGrath reports that in January of 2005, the war in Iraq saw the lowest historical Tooth-to-Tail Ratio in the last century. At that point, shortly before the so-called “surge,” 25% of Army troops serving inside Iraq did so in a “combat role,” meaning they were categorized by job description in such a manner (86). Of course, this number still does not account for the percentage of those soldiers who actually saw combat, nor does it address any other branch of the military or any of the thousands of military servicemen and women who served outside the borders of Iraq.\(^0\)

In 2008, the RAND corporation published their findings from a massive study of veterans who had returned from Iraq and Afghanistan and the “invisible wounds of war” that came home with them. Among other things, the study found that of 1,965 veterans who had deployed to either Iraq or Afghanistan, only 9.5% had engaged in “hand-to-hand

\(^69\) The law that codified the “tooth-to-tail” ratio is the 1974 Nunn Amendment that sought to correct a perceived deficiency in the United States’ force structure in Europe at that time (McGrath 32-35).

\(^70\) According to a recent Congressional Research Service report, in December of 2008, there were 15,111 military personnel deployed to locations outside of Iraq and Afghanistan, and there were 15,055 sailors aboard ships (Belasco 5).
combat” (Schell 97). As we can see, this number, the rate of combat exposure among deployed military members, is a very difficult one to track down. Questions immediately arise: How does one define “hand-to-hand”? How trustworthy is self-reported information? What type of combat “counts”? Regardless, two things are clear; when we consider the full population of personnel who have deployed in support of the Global War on Terror, 9.5% is most likely a high number, and it will continue to be difficult to define combat, combat zones, or what it means to be combat experienced. It is possible that combat exposure is immaterial or irrelevant to hajji’s appearance and symbolic resilience in the discourse of war.

Here, I should pause and say that I do not highlight this number in order to diminish the service of any individual who deployed in any capacity in Iraq, Afghanistan, and beyond in support of either conflict. Indeed, I argue for the exact opposite treatment of noncombat troops. In 2011, the Department of Defense reported that nearly 83% of military members who committed suicide that year had no history of direct combat (Luxton 30). All career fields in all branches of the military experience war guilt and the impacts of trauma. All also use hajji. One example may demonstrate my point. I flew a KC-10 refueling tanker over Iraq and Afghanistan for a total of roughly 1,200 “combat” hours between 2006 and 2010, and the whole time no hostile enemy ever threatened my airplane (though once my crew and I did think a rocket was headed our way, but it turned out to be an illumination flare 20,000 feet below us at an American Marine base). This is, admittedly, a relatively small amount of flight time compared to my pilot peers. At any
rate, I landed after every one of those 120 missions at an airbase in the middle of the desert south of Abu Dhabi. There was plenty of paranoia and posturing about security, but that sprawling base was as safe as my home base in New Jersey. Yet, every person who lived and worked and slept on that base received combat pay.  

In 2007, the Air Force introduced a new “Combat Action Medal” to be worn on the uniform by “members” who are included in the following guidelines:

[To be awarded the medal, a member must] deliberately go into the enemy’s domain (outside the wire) to conduct official duties, either on the ground or in the air, and have come under enemy fire by lethal weapons while performing those duties, and are at risk of grave danger; or . . . While defending the base (inside/on the wire), [he/she] must have come under fire and engage the enemy with direct and lethal fire, and are at the risk of grave danger; or . . . [he/she must be] personnel in ground operations who actively engage the enemy with direct and lethal fires also may qualify even if no direct fire is taken, as long as there was risk of grave danger. (“Air Force” 142)

None of my experiences while deployed to Al Dhaftra met these criteria, nor do the experiences of most of the people who popularized hajji, or of the people (as far as I know) who lived and worked with me on that base in the United Arab Emirates. I heard  

______________________________  

71 Combat pay is officially known as “imminent danger pay.” For the Internal Revenue Service, drawing such pay also triggers one’s eligibility for the Combat Zone Tax Exclusion provision, meaning the military member is not required to pay income tax on his or her military earnings for that particular month. The Department of Defense periodically “certifies” areas for designation as imminent danger pay areas. According to a DoD News Release, in June of 2014 the United Arab Emirates was “decertified” for such designation.

72 The Air Force didn’t award anything similar before 9/11, though it has, for years, awarded an “Air Medal” based on the number of “combat” missions one flies in “combat” territory. For the other branches, there are similar awards known as the Army Combat Action Badge and the Navy and Marine Corps Combat Action Ribbon.
hajji everywhere though: at the chow hall, at the gym, in official presentations. A high-ranking officer on my base, in his welcome speech for my last deployment in late 2009, told me and the other support troops, “There are still a lot of hajjis who need killing out there.”

So I ask: might the people who never directly experience combat—which is a huge proportion of the people who deployed in support of the wars in Iraq and Afghanistan—and those who do experience combat)—be using symbols like hajji, not to pass on any information about their relationship with the described object, but, as Burke suggests, to “establish a moral identity with [their] group by using the same moral weightings they used”? (Permanence 177-178). Is this not what the song “Hadji Girl” actually enacts? Such a question can be extremely useful in our attempts to unearth the true motivations and uses of a term like hajji in the discourse of our wars since 9/11.

When we agree that words are modes of action, we do indeed have to consider the nonverbal context in which the word appears. Yet, as Burke argues, if we can consider words as “acts upon a scene” then we can approach war literature in terms of that act-scene moment and “avoid the excess of the environmentalist schools which are usually so eager to trace the relationships between act and scene that they neglect to trace the structure of the act itself” (Philosophy xvii).

We need to view hajji within Burke’s understanding of language as symbolic action. Thomas Ricks, in Fiasco (2006), his analysis of the invasion of Iraq, writes about an Army colonel named H.R. McMaster who taught his soldiers “from the outset that the
key to counterinsurgency is focusing on the people, not the enemy” (420). In that spirit, McMaster issued a standing order that all soldiers would “treat detainees professionally” and, Ricks reports, he also “banned his soldiers from using the term ’haji’ as a slang to describe them because he saw it as inaccurate and disrespectful of their religion” (420). When McMaster took over this regiment, he was fighting a tradition of inaccurate symbol use among a group of noncombat soldiers. He was trying to improve the interactions of his troops and the local population. But what is it about the social order he was in charge of that so deeply ingrained such linguistic behavior? The answer might be in Burke’s concept of “identification.”

Burke, in *A Rhetoric of Motives* (1969) suggests that “identification” is much more useful than “persuasion” as the key element of any rhetorical motive. Whereas “persuasion” implies intention and specificity of purpose, identification is for Burke a process born out of a natural human need to overcome the isolation inherent in human order and hierarchy. As Levy points out in her discussion of a military “disglossia,” the culture of the military is dominated by the rhetoric of rank and submission, of class, and of regulations (99-101). But it is also dominated by countless collective acts that groups enact in order to overcome the difference that determines each level of the hierarchy.

---

73 See Lydia Wilkes’ “‘Now Here’s What Really Happened’: The Rhetoric of Authentic Experience in War Memoir” for an interesting analysis of Burke’s concept of identification as an explanation for the popularity of first-person shooter video games that trade on the public’s desire for authenticity over empathy (179-180). She writes, “identification also occurs between gamers and video game characters—but the emphasis is on identifying with a character rather than with a person” (179).
Levy says that one reason “military folks speak as they do” is to display a sense of “solidarity,” and so she breaks her “disglossia” into two categories: officialese (“O”) and enlistic (“E”) (100). She goes to extensive lengths to point out how “both O and E are artificial constructs that serve to build cultural competence in a novel situation. And they do that by operating together” (112). She does not, however, recognize that hajji crosses all the categories she devises; it requires no “code-switching” or any other linguistic maneuver she praises the military member for mastering (111).

In Ethics, Norms, and the Narratives of War (2014), Pamela Creed “presents the stories of veterans of the Iraq War who expressed varying degrees of anger, shame and guilt over the public storylines” (100). She interviews a number of veterans who mention their unease with hajji as it appeared during their deployments in Iraq, but one subject, a man named “Gregg,” explains in very clear terms how he heard hajji being used and abused in order to forge a cultural competency that crosses the lines between combat and noncombat troops and between enlisted soldiers and their officers. As he puts it, hajji helped established an entire “system that’s put in place” (115).

The story, as Gregg tells it, begins with a Private First Class, a very young, low-ranking soldier, from Gregg’s unit. One day this teenager gets nervous when a car doesn’t slow soon enough before the roadblock and checkpoint he is manning. So this teenager puts “more than 200 rounds” in the car and kills an unarmed family of four, including a four-year-old boy and a three-year-old girl (115). That night, after the incident is “briefed
to the general,” a colonel (a high-ranking officer, known as a “full-bird” because of the rank insignia he or she wears) has some choice words about the incident:

[T]his full-bird colonel turns in his chair to this entire division of level staff and says, “If these fucking hajjis learned to drive, this shit wouldn’t happen.” And right then and there I looked around and nobody – everybody just went, “Mmmm, hmmm, fucking hajjis.” And I was just like – you know, I expect it from the grunts, who to get through the day racially dehumanize but that’s when I really started to look at the fact that it wasn’t the lower ranking grunts on the ground that do this. It’s a system that’s put into place. (115)

Gregg continues his rant against the way the phrase “fucking hajjis” was established as a major part of the wartime system he was part of, a system that manipulates language so that it serves a wider hegemonic function:

I think back to the first night I was in Kuwait. It’s your first briefing in the country and they say – they talk about going north and about how you can’t trust any of these fucking hajjis. All these fucking hajjis are out to kill you. All these fucking hajjis are gonna stab you in the back. All these fucking hajjis are waiting to throw a grenade in your truck. Don’t buy food off these fucking hajjis. These fucking hajjis have no respect for life, blah, blah, blah. And it ends with this E-7 (a high-ranking enlisted man) who tells a story. He says – or gives us a scenario. He says, “So, your convoy’s driving down the road. In the middle of the road is this little fucking hajji kid. What do you do?” And somebody yells, “Stop.” And he says, “No, you just killed your whole fucking convoy. What do you do?” Someone else says, “Turn down another road.” He says, “No time. What the fuck do you do?” And finally someone just says, “Run him over?” And he says, “You’re damn right. You don’t let any of these little fucking hajjis get in the way of getting you home, even if it’s a little fucking hajji kid.” (115)

The similarities of this speech and the one I heard when I was welcomed for one of my own deployments are startling. As Burke states, “often we must think of rhetoric not in terms of some one particular address but as a general body of identifications that owe their convincingness much more to trivial repetition and dull daily reinforcement than to
exceptional rhetorical skill” (Rhetoric 26). In many military members’ blind acceptance of *hajji* as natural and inoffensive, some soldiers miss the insidious strength of their need to symbolically identify with others. They also miss the guilt that comes with it.

Gregg would do well to read Burke’s *A Rhetoric of Motives*. In Burkean terms, we can conceive of American military members being “both joined and separate, at once a distinct substance and consubstantial with each other” according to levels of combat exposure, gender, rank, race, job type, and any number of other distinctions (Rhetoric 21). *Hajji*, however, serves mainly to effect consubstantiality between the hazard-facing combat troop and everyone else. To simplify Burke’s methodology, for soldier A to identify with soldier B, A must become “consubstantial” with B. This is an act of identification. Yes, both the “Colonel” and the “E-7” from Gregg’s story are doing their fair share of Chris Kyle-style dehumanization, but they are also institutionalizing the ways one achieves consubstantiation in this particular generation of war. However, Burke would remind us, this “identification” and “consubstantiation” is “by the same token, though roundabout” an exercise that “confront[s] the implications of division” (Rhetoric 22). This division and the guilt it produces is the mechanism by which problems in a structure so ordered can be exposed, and competing narratives can be introduced. As Burke elaborates in *A Grammar of Motives*,

To call a man a friend of brother is to proclaim him consubstantial with oneself, one’s values or purposes. To call a man a bastard is to attack him by attacking his whole line, his “authorship,” his “principle” or “motive” (as expressed in terms of the familial). An epithet assigns substance doubly, for in stating the character of the object it at the same time
contains an implicit program of action with regard to the object, thus serving as motive. (57)

Elizabeth Samet, in *Soldier’s Heart* (2007), writes about teaching war literature at West Point. At one point, she discusses how a former student of hers, upon entering the active duty Army, became “frustrated” with the curriculum of a professional development and leadership course that he recently finished as a routine part of his progression as a career officer. Samet describes his ire:

> Even in the wake of Abu Ghraib and Guantanamo, the curriculum seemed to him to include insufficient instruction in just war theory and the laws of land warfare. He was also nonplussed by the fact that even a few of his instructors referred to the Iraqis as “hajjis.” (164)

What the instructors at this stateside Army course were enacting had nothing to do with actual war; rather, they were demonstrating the ingrained ways military members rhetorically identify with each other. *Hajji* is a hegemonic manifestation of these people’s attempt to be consubstantial with combat, with combat troops, and with the “real” experiences of war. Burke writes that “a speaker persuades an audience by the use of stylistic identifications; his act of persuasion may be for the purpose of causing the audience to identify itself with the speaker’s interests” (*Rhetoric* 46). In the prologue to *A Rhetoric of Motives*, Burke explains his concept of identification further with the example of a politician who speaks to farmers at a rally and says, “I was a farm boy myself” (xiv). This is essentially what those instructors are doing with *hajji*; by using it in front of students, the instructor says, “I know about war. I am a warrior too.”

Yet, *hajji* is slightly different from Burke’s example because it also trades on what Burke calls “congregation by segregation” and what George Cheney calls
“identification by antithesis,” whereby the speaker seeks out “common ground” with others by drawing up the despised virtues of an “enemy” both share (148). Such antithesis can operate, as it often does in large collectives, via an “assumed we,” meaning that a speaker acts linguistically in a way that goes unnoticed by most but still allows an almost unconscious grouping of anyone who is present (Cheney 148). Somewhat “magically” then, *hajji* becomes for those instructors one of what Burke would call “many purely formal patterns [that] can awaken an attitude of collaborative expectancy” (*Rhetoric* 58). Once a member grasps the trend of *hajji*’s appropriation and use in such a way, it begs participation. Burke warns, “Mystery arises at the point where different kinds of beings are in communication. There is strangeness but also the possibility of communion” (*Rhetoric* 115). It is the “strangeness,” the “division,” the “antithesis” of *hajji* that Samet’s former student and Creed’s interview subject Gregg are rejecting. Were Samet’s former student to speak up and point out the symbol abuse to his higher-ranking instructors, no doubt he would draw the ire of members all along the hierarchy’s structure.

*Hajji* plays a similar role in Helen Benedict’s novel *Sand Queen* (2011) when Benedict portrays it as a key tool of identification for an Army unit in Iraq. Early on in the novel, a number of Iraqis are crowding around the main gate of a compound where American soldiers are detaining a number of Iraqi men, most of whom are innocent of any wrongdoing. A man, a guard named DJ, says to the protagonist Kate, “We gotta get these hajjis to leave.” Kate says nothing in response, but she thinks, “I wish he wouldn’t
use that word in front of Naema” (Naema is an Iraqi woman who is quickly becoming a close friend of Kate’s) (72). When Naema leaves, Kate talks to DJ about the incident: “Don’t say ‘hajji’ in front of them like that . . . it’s not respectful” (72). DJ responds by recasting these individual Iraqi men and women as a monolithic: “And I suppose it was respectful when those motherfuckers blew up Jones and Harman last week? Jesus Christ, Brady, whose fuckin’ side are you on?” (73). Later, when Kate reports another soldier for sexually assaulting her, her superior chastises her: “Soldier, in case you forgot, we’re at war. The cohesion of our unit is of paramount importance, and my job as a platoon sergeant is to preserve that cohesion. We have a common enemy, and that is the hajji” (148-149).

Both of these characters are enacting, as Thomas Conley says in The Rhetoric of Insult, an “intimate sharing of both beliefs and values” with the slur (98). They are simply trying to gather support and affect unification while they also persuade all others that to do so they must retain a position of moral superiority to the other side, no matter how superfluous that other side is conceived. However, in both of these scenes from Sand Queen, the incongruity of hajji’s reference confuses any possible argument that the word has anything to do with “combat” or a thing referred to as a “common enemy.”

Benedict presents the paradox of hajji’s deployment by contradicting the confidence of DJ and the self-serving certainty of the platoon sergeant with Kate’s more open-minded perspective, one that thrives on a healthy dose of ambiguity. The men apply a precision of reference that just isn’t there, and Kate is castigated for not sharing such
certainty. In other words, she fails to identify herself with the others via *hajji* and thereby display common “sensations, concepts, images, ideas, attitudes that make them *consubstantial*” (*Rhetoric* 21). DJ is using *hajji* to establish a consubstantial identification with the others, including the dead guys, but he misses the ironic blurring of identity that exists within the word *hajji*. Does he mean *hajji* to refer to a group of women who are concerned for the future of their jailed family members? Does he use *hajji* to point to combatants who blew up his friends? Does *hajji* indicate the innocent men jailed inside the compound? Of course, DJ lacks the inclination and ability to care about the answers to these questions, but he is mistaken in his assumption that *hajji* has something to do with the people to whom he thinks he is referring. Rather, he abuses *hajji* to reinforce oppositions, to form “sides” quite literally. He challenges Kate’s non-identification: “whose fuckin’ side are you on?” (73). Kate’s supervisor is equally—if not more—mistaken. He goes so far as to use her non-identification through *hajji* as fodder for his refusal to hold her attacker responsible for a sex crime. Kate’s failure to join them there, however, marks the seperateness inherent in the process of identification. In this way, *hajji* is not only a tool of consensus building; it also provides the purgative cure for the guilt that comes out of it as well.

When an instructor in a classroom or a guard at a detention center or a drunken soldier in an isolated post in Iraq uses *hajji*, all are marking consubstantiality both within their culture and without. As Burke puts it, “And so, in the end, men are brought to that most tragically ironic of all divisions, or conflicts, wherein millions of cooperative acts
go into the preparation for one single destructive act” (22). If order, Burke says, then
guilt. Likewise, if identification, then separation. Since consubstantiality denotes a certain
overlap between the two (for instance, all military members wear uniforms) and
difference (no two uniforms are identical due to differing services, badges, medals, and
other accoutrement), we continually assuage the guilt we bear (and also acquire more
guilt) by continually seeking association with new groups at the expense of others.

Soldiers, airmen, marines, sailors, officers, enlisted troops, noncommissioned
officers, combat troops, support troops: they all mark difference and seperateness in
countless ways. Benedict’s novel includes an excellent treatment of this process and the
scapegoat mechanism that hajji triggers. Both of the men above insist that hajji refers to a
“common enemy,” but this is patently incorrect. It isn’t as if the enemy is otherwise
unrecognizable. The only reason they need hajji to affect cohesion is due to an anxiety
about the order in which they exist. Both men abuse hajji as a tool of identification, and
once that identification is established, the attendant division therein suggests that hajji
must also act as the group’s purgative cure, its symbolic scapegoat.

A symbol like hajji maintains its place in the scene since it combines two kinds of
“form”—the “progressive form” and the “repetitive form”—according what Kenneth
Burke calls the “Interrelation of Forms” (Counter-Statement 128). Burke breaks his
“progressive form” into two categories: qualitative progression and syllogistic
progression (Counter-Statement 124). In this scene from Sand Queen, qualitative
progression describes the state of mind DJ and the platoon sergeant have been put in (that
Kate rejects) and from which another, related mood of anger and revenge, can emerge (Counter-Statement 125). “Repetitive form” is the “restatement of the same thing but in different ways,” with added details (Counter-Statement 125). Thus, DJ falls back on hajji’s vague references, repeatedly, right after he asks Kate which side she is on. When the two elements cross, the overlap creates a syllogistic “fall,” or malign form of rhetoric that creates the symbolic scapegoat, for the “scapegoat is dialectically appealing, since it combines in one figure contrary principles of identification and alienation” (Rhetoric 141). William Rueckert explains: “in every hierarchy, at every level of it, there are secret identifications that are in reality inducements to violence and victimization” (Encounters 76). Secret identifications happen all along the hierarchy of the United States military as well, and with our post-9/11 wars, hajji has become the latest victim of the violence those identifications encourage.

**Hajji in America**

In “The Morality of Indian Hating,” N. Scott Momaday writes about the way centuries of racism have created a space where the “Indian” lives within an imagined, purely symbolic place:

> The unique position of the Indian in this society is anomalously fixed and mutable, here and there, truth and fiction. The Indian has been for a long time generalized in the imagination of the white man. Denied the acknowledgment of individuality and change, he has been made to become in theory what he could not become in fact, a synthesis of himself. (30)
He says that this “synthesis” reflects western (white) man’s “inclination to impose the most convenient identities upon friends and acquaintances, strangers and enemies” (31). He calls this tendency the “rule of convenience” (31).

_Hajji_ follows the same set of rules. It draws from a basis of symbolic stereotypes (topoi) that began with our construction of the imagined “Indian,” a symbolic simulation that has been reproduced again and again whenever we go to war in order to execute what has become a comforting and self-serving ideological purpose. Robert Ivie explains, “The topoi, metaphorically speaking, are a ‘reservoir of ideas’ or core images from which specific rhetorical statements can be generated” (“Images” 281). _Hajji_ has emerged as this generation’s rhetorical statement regarding the drama of our wars in Iraq and Afghanistan. It operates quite nicely according to Burke’s description of a “god-term” which he defines as:

> The Ground of all possibility; substance, nature; history; society; necessity; mind; consciousness; self-consciousness; truth; _genius loci_; efficient cause. Title of titles; over-all motivation (hence, ultimate generalization, reduction, abstraction); principle of language or dialectic (logos); idea; center, circumference, apex, base (preferably all at once); unclassified, unfiled, miscellaneous, “All.”  (*Rhetoric* 299-300)

_Hajji_ is a Burkean “god-term” of these wars because, as a linguistic tool of rhetoric, it is capable of “transcending brute objects” (*Rhetoric* 299, 276). In that transcendence, _hajji_, like the word “God,” becomes a symbolic “summing-up” of the topoi-based motives and hierarchies that frame its utterance (*Rhetoric* 300).
This is also what lends to *hajji’s* movement from rhetoric to reality and from war to post-war contexts. In early 2011, the Virginia Department of Motor Vehicles revoked the tags of a veteran of the Iraq war—named Sean Bujno—who had been driving around with license plates that read “ICUHAJI” for four years (see fig. 11). The revocation of the tags was based on the DMV’s belated finding that the message of the plate encouraged violence (Daugherty). Bujno appealed the decision (and won) on the grounds that, as his lawyer argued, “he got to know the culture in Iraq and was saying, ‘I see you, brother’” (qtd. in Hawkes). Interestingly enough, Bujno’s father had already attempted to obtain license plates that read “HAJIKLR” (Hawkes).

The case has moved from appeal to appeal, and Bujno’s lawyers are trying to turn it into a free speech issue. As far as I am concerned, however, the license plates show
how pervasive symbol mongering, according to Momaday’s “rule of convenience,” has become in the United States. Some may argue, as Bujno’s lawyer unconvincingly did, that *hajji*’s appropriation is a statement of solidarity, one that retains the Arabic word’s denotative sense. Others yet may argue that *hajji* carries deeper, more performative implications. Each generation of American war—and the agents who fight in war and/or write about war—is skilled in absorbing the biases and prejudices of previous generations. The topoi in American depictions of an enemy have remained consistent from one war to the next. The reality is—sadly—that *hajji* is probably already entrenched as a sign-carrier and that future generations will encounter it and accept it as just another quaint term that emerges from war.

Nowhere else are the malign effects of the symbolic scapegoating significance of *hajji* more alarming than in Jim Frederick non-fiction book *Black Hearts: One Platoon’s Descent into Madness in Iraq’s Triangle of Death* (2010). Therein, Frederick presents one of the most disturbing chronicles of hate and crime during war in Iraq. *Hajji* is a key operator throughout. His thoroughly researched book describes one Army unit that, as his subtitle relates, slowly disintegrates into absolute moral depravity in Iraq in 2006 after a series of frustrating and demoralizing events. Early on in this unit’s deployment, Frederick notes that one soldier, a man named Casica, stands out in his attempts to “retain his optimism” and “unflappable friendliness” about the Iraqis even though he had already been injured in a rocket-propelled grenade attack (69, 68). He is a well-liked member of the platoon, but the others begin calling him a “Hadji Hugger” and a “Hadji Fucker” (69).
Casica, though, loses his battle against the tide of hatred and poor leadership that plagues the platoon, and then he loses his life to an insurgent’s bullet. This is just the excuse these bored and frustrated soldiers need to commit horrible crimes against hadji. As a soldier named Payne reflects later, when Casica is killed, “That’s when things started to turn” (143).

Emotions are running very high in the unit when a young soldier named Green has a heated conversation with his superiors, men named Lieutenant Colonel Kunk and Sergeant Major Edwards:

“They all deserve to die,” (Green says).

“Goddamn it. That’s not true,” Kunk responded testily. Ninety to ninety-five percent of the Iraqi people are good people and they want the same thing that we have in the United States: democracy. Yes, there are five percent of them that might be bad, and those are the terrorists. Those are the bad guys that we’re going after.”

“Fuck the Hadjis,” Green declared.

“Calling them that is like calling me a nigger,” said Edwards. “This sounds like you hate a whole race of people.”

“That’s about it right there,” Green said, “You just about summed it up.” (144)

The hatred and animosity attached to this imaginary construct known as “hadji” continues to mount, though. At one point, the platoon’s lieutenant tries “to get the guys to focus more on the Iraqis as people, to consider that man over there as not just another fucking Hadji, but as Ali, who owns a falafel shop and loves his kids and has problems” (189). That effort fails though, and sadly, the symbolic action of these soldiers’ language gets even more brutal, as does their treatment of the local population.
In *Collateral Damage: America’s War Against Iraq Civilians* (2008), Chris Hedges and Laila Al-Arian discuss “haji” as a disturbing byproduct of the fear, stress, and hostility that troops face in Iraq, a place Hedges describes as an “atrocities-producing situation” (xiii). The situation these soldiers find themselves in, in which *hajji* plays such a large role, most definitely produces atrocities. The men begin beating up random Iraqis for no reason, and one group begins fantasizing about scenarios that would allow them to get vengeance for the deaths of their fallen brethren. At one point, a group of these soldiers are guarding a group of women and children. They are drunk on illicitly obtained booze, and they are drunk on power and fear. “All these Hadjis are motherfuckers!” one of the drunk soldiers yells, “we ought to just kill them all” (257).

Soon thereafter, four soldiers (named Steven Green, James Barker, Jesse Spielman, and Paul Cortez) plan their crime against *hajji*:

Barker knew Green was always begging to kill Iraqis, if only someone would say the word.

“You’ll kill them, right?” Barker asked.

“Absolutely,” Green replied. “It don’t make any difference to me,” Green said. “A Hadji is a Hadji.” (259)

Later that night, these four American soldiers burst into a quiet Iraq home and gang rape a fourteen-year old girl. Then, they execute the family of four (including the six-year old brother) and burn the bodies.\(^74\)

---

\(^74\) All four soldiers were eventually convicted for their crimes and all four are serving life sentences. Green is in the United States Penitentiary in Terre Haute, Indiana since he had been discharged from military service before the crime was reported. The other three are...
It is difficult to draw any cohesive lesson from this story, but one thing is certain: as this platoon descended deeper and deeper into their particular version of consubstantiation—a slovenly-conceived place of common ground and identification built on fear and hate—hajji was always there to describe this group’s eventual victims, their scapegoats. It had nothing to do with sense making in a senseless warzone or with warrior knowledge. Rather, as Burke writes in *The Philosophy of Literary Form*, these scapegoated victims were the final part of a mechanism that first assigned them a symbolic ambiguity and then used them like a “‘suppurating’ device,” one that “brings the evil ‘to a head’” (46).

We probably can’t stop hajji, but we can indeed note its power and the way that war is perpetuated through extensive scapegoat mechanisms. We can note the true function of and need for scapegoats for a nation when it goes to war, and we can remain alert to what our need for a scapegoat reflects about us as a society. As Burke asks, “Would we not then be at least headed in the right direction?” (“Linguistic” 301).

serving life sentences in the U.S. Disciplinary Barracks at Fort Leavenworth, Kansas (Frederick 350-369). In 2007, a movie treatment—*Redacted*, directed by Brian de Palma—of these horrific events was released. See Martin Barker’s *A Toxic Genre* for a short discussion of the film (37-42).
Works Cited


369
“Billy Lynn’s Long Halftime Walk” by Ben Fountain: The War Novel of Our Time.”


“Stolen Identities: The Impact of Racist Stereotypes on Indigenous People.”


<indiancountrytodaymedianetwork.com/2011/05/06/geronimos-great-grandson-reacts-32639>.


*ProQuest Historical Newspapers*. 31 Dec. 2014.


Jehl, Douglas, and Andrea Elliot. “Cuba Base Sent Its Interrogators to Iraqi Prison.”


*Lone Survivor*. Dir. Peter Berg. Screenplay Peter Berg. Universal, 2013. DVD.


Luxton, David D., Janyce E. Osenbach, Mark A. Reger, Derek J. Smolenski, Nancy A. Skopp, Nigel E. Bush, and Gregory A. Gahm. *DoDSER: Department of Defense*


<lareviewofbooks.org/essay/trauma-hero-wilfred-owen-redployment-american-sniper>.

---. Message to the author. 28 Jan. 2015. E-mail.


Van Buren, Peter. “America Loves its War Porn: American Sniper and the Hollywood


<youtube.com/watch?v=3vcmASDmEr8>.


